

## MAMIWOTA MARRIED AGAIN

INSERT.....02

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*Ruslan continued to hold him tight and Mpendulo also continued to cry out loud....after sometime Ruslan picked him up and he went inside the room and he found Thandi trying to calm Mpilo down then he put Mpendulo on top of the bed and he put both his thumbs on his forehead then he whispered some spell and immediately Mpendulo fell asleep..... then he made him sleep properly and he went to Thandi and he picked Mpilo up and Mpilo rested his head on his shoulder crying with hiccups and he went to sit down on the edge of the bed with him on his lap\*\*\*

Ruslan: my pilot look at me

\*\*\*he did slowly and Ruslan wiped off his tears and mucus\*\*\*

Ruslan: it's gonna be ok im here for you and Im never going anywhere you hear me

\*\*\*Mpilo nodded sobbing with hiccups \*\*\*

Ruslan: your dad is with angels now and he's looking down on you ok and he loves you very much....and as for me im gonna be here for you im not going anywhere ok

\*\*\*he nodded\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you ok my pilot

\*\*\*he nodded and Ruslan kept on wiping his tears off and he rested Mpendulo's head on his chest and he held him and he looked at Thandi who looked like a beautiful mess...seeing her sons in this state broke her heart into pieces\*\*\*

Ruslan: you need to be strong for them amour....never shed tears in front of them they are still kids and they need to see you as their super woman so they can be strong themselves....i know it hurts my love but when they see you coping even though you know that inside it hurts it will show them that all will be well cause mama is holding on and coping.....and this chest is yours to let it all out to cry to scream and to feel and look like shit but the moment you are around them you put up a brave and happy face so they'll be able to move on from this pain ok

\*\*\*she nodded wiping her tears off\*\*\*

Ruslan: you know I got you so be strong for your boys and let daddy handle the rest ok

\*\*\*she nodded again feeling lucky to have Ruslan in her life\*\*\*

Ruslan: good

\*\*\*then he got up with Mpilo\*\*\*

Ruslan: time for you to rest a bit my pilot

\*\*\*he said putting him next to his brother and he did what he did to Mpendulo and Mpilo also fell asleep then he covered them with a throw blanket and he went to Thandi and helped her up and he kissed her forehead and led her out of the room and they went to Ruslan's bedroom and they laid in bed with Thandi's head on his chest\*\*\*

Thandi: how did you make them fall asleep like that?

\*\*\* she asked with a curious tone and he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: it's my little secret but don't worry I'll tell you all about it after the funeral

Thandi: ummm why after the funeral?

Ruslan: because after the funeral im gonna get an answer to my marriage proposal and it better be Yes then im gonna tell you all about myself my favorite color food drinks...my favorite sex position the size of my erect dick where my birthmark is and many other things including my "trick" that made the boys to fall asleep that quick

\*\*\*Thandi giggled and he kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Ruslan: now its time I do that little trick on you too so you can rest....when the boys wake up they need to find you looking fresh and better ok

Thandi: umm

\*\*\*he flipped them over and he was on top looking down on her and he smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you so damn much and as much as it stings that you cried for another man but I understand cause you've been with that man for years and you have kids together.... but I will not...I repeat.... I will not take it lightly if you agree to mourn for him like a wife does for her husband and if they say they want their dowry back tell them its fine I'll pay double the amount he paid for you ok

\*\*\*she nodded and he perked her lips and his hand travelled to her stomach and he smirked and bend a bit again and he kissed her for some time...after a while he pulled out of the kiss and he put his thumbs on her forehead looking straight into her beautiful eyes and he whispered the spell\*\*\*

Thandi: huh?

\*\*\*she asked cause she couldn't hear what he was saying then she immediately fell asleep and he kissed her forehead and he went down and also kissed her stomach then he made

her sleep comfortably and he covered her with a throw blanket and got out of bed and he walked out going down stairs\*\*\*

.  
. .  
.

\*\*\*the guys their wives and kids where still around and now the guys were inside Ray's study room except for Mj after Ruslan asked them to go there to talk\*\*\*

Jabu: how are they?

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: it will take time but they'll be fine

Ray: well im more worried about you cause we all know those people will do anything in their power to put the blame on Tee for his death cause she left him....you know how grieving families can be and they might even fight her for the cents he left or even force her to sit on the mattress and mourn him like a wife should

Heath: eish plus she once told me how bad they have been treating her ever since she left him

Jabu: ba nyela megwete ya bona nx ( swear words)..... Fucken shit

\*\*\*Heath and Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: my Thandi is off limits so they better not try that shit or I'll unleash hell on them

\*\*\*then he rubbed his head roughly\*\*\*

Ray: what is it?

Ruslan: I think there's foul play here....something possessed the chick to kill him

\*\*\*they looked at each other\*\*\*

Heath: nah I don't think so Portia is ghetto like that and she's just trash I mean she's worse than Omphile's mother

Jabu: heh I can't believe James ne a ja sefebe sele Portia (heh I can't believe James was fucking that bitch Portia)

Heath: mmmmh remember if you fuck a bitch you'll also die by one

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: im dead serious man....James and the chick are victims on this something forced the chick to kill James now my question is who or what did that and why

\*\*\*they all looked at him surprised\*\*\*

Ruslan: what?

Heath: why do you care about who or what killed him

Ruslan: cause even though I hated the nigga but he's Mpe and Mpilo's father and they love him dearly even though he was a shitty father lately.... they are broken man and I hate seeing them like that....i was willing to let him live after he hurt Thandi because of those boys

\*\*\*they all nodded\*\*\*

Jabu: now understand why you said you'll handle him your way

Ray: so what do you wanna do?

Ruslan: I'll get to the bottom of it for the boys and give you feedback

Heath: ok

\*\*\*he got up\*\*\*

Heath: this is our queue to head home im sure my wife and kids are tired....we will see ya'll tomorrow

Jabu: we are also vaying too ( leave too)

\*\*\*he said getting up too and Heath and Ray laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: tomorrow gents (guys)

\*\*\*they all fist bumped and walked out then Ray got his tablet and he got busy on it and gave it to Ruslan\*\*\*

Ray: I bumped into the story in the morning I was waiting for us to be alone so I can show you

\*\*\*he read the headlines and continued to read the rest of the story and he frowned and looked up at Ray\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's here?

Ray: his last known location was Sierra Leone where he lived with Juana

Ruslan: this can't be.... maybe it's the Beasts

\*\*\*Ray shook his head\*\*\*

Ray: it's not I asked Mateo to do some research about the incident and he found out that the girl that is kidnapped is a girlfriend to one of Baba's hitman Menzi or Manzi and the guy

contacted Baba after she was taken probably to ask for help cause the search is on for her and it's Khumalo's men searching for her all over

\*\*\*Ruslan got up still holding the Tablet\*\*\*

Ruslan: so he's here....he's been here all along

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: it looks like it but my question is why her and why did he kill the guys in that manner

Ruslan: he's a vampire so he's supposed to suck their blood so why did he kill them like that cause the last time he killed someone like that it was that guy that once kidnapped Juana that time....its like he was angry or...

Ray: protecting the girl from the guys cause Mat found out that the guys had guns on them and one of the guy's gun was fired on the scene cause a neighbor confirmed that he heard a gunshot....then the blood on the ground is probably hers and her belongings were found on the scene

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed rubbing his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: they say the car door was ripped off the car and thrown meters away from the scene....shit he's here....that son of Vamp is here

Ray: but why though and where is Juana

Ruslan: he always wanted a child what if he kidnaped the girl to bear him a child cause if he changed Juana then she won't be able to bear him children or Juana fell pregnant and the child killed her...fuck I don't know

Ray: shit...yeah it could be but Juana is a sweetheart man she wouldn't do that to another woman.....we both know his seeds are toxic man....maybe his child killed her

Ruslan: people change man....i mean look at Cass that motherfucker was my brother and I trusted him and what did he do he fucken betrayed me for a woman so he probably changed her to be like him nx ungrateful bastard

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: we both know why he did what he did Ruu

Ruslan: fuck him....that bitch-ass-nigga had a choice....he could've told me and that would've showed that he doesn't wanna do it and that he can't betray me or lose Juana and we would've found a way for him to give the Brethrens what they want and for him to also save Juana but he chose to betray me instead....so much for brotherhood fucken piece of shit!

\*\*\*he said looking angry and Ray sighed again\*\*\*

Ray: calm down

\*\*\*Ruslan huffed and he put the Tablet down\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's gonna kill that girl if he wants her to carry his child....and Juana how could she let that happen.....fuck

Ray: wait what if all the women that went missing here in South Africa are all his victims

Ruslan: shit.....I need to find him before the Khumalos does cause they'll kill him man....we both know he won't go down without a fight and he's a fucken lunatic he might kill them even

\*\*\*Ray got up and he started pacing around\*\*\*

Ray: then Mbali will be shattered and Saint will come out and shit will hit the fan.....yeah we need to find him cause it says on the article the woman is also pregnant and since the hitman is loyal to the Khumalos they'll do anything to find her and when they do its gonna be a blood bath that will affect everyone including us man.....Saint will go berserk for his mother so we need to find him man....and we cant tell the Khumalos cause you know how the brothers are

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*\* AT MENZI AND BUHLE'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Menzi has locked himself inside his study ever since he came back in the morning he's busy calling in favors and also doing anything possible to find Kazi but nothing tangible was coming out of it and as for Buhle she's upstairs in their bedroom worried as hell....she's rereading the story of Kazi's kidnapping for the umpteenth time....she can see how her kidnapping affected Menzi he's a mess...he hasn't slept bathed or eaten anything and she's worried about him.... then the door opened and he walked in and he went straight to the en-suite bathroom and she heard the shower running then she sighed....less than five minutes later he got out and he dried himself and put lotion on his body and he got dressed as she watched then he walked to the door but then he stopped midway and he turned to look at her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Menzi: if you had anything to do with her kidnapping then you better commit suicide or bring her back alive with my kids still safely in her womb before I find out....she's carrying my kids and....

\*\*\*he swallowed getting more angry and emotional at the same time\*\*\*

Menzi: the blood found on the ground indicated that she was shot on the stomach area and if...if anything happened to my kids and you are involved im going to give you a slow and painful death just like I did to your shuga daddy....i hope you aren't involved Buhle cause I'd hate to make you meet your ancestors in a most cruel manner

\*\*\*then he walked out slamming the door leaving Buhle shaking with fear\*\*\*

.

\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION\*\*\*\*

\*\*\* The following day Castiel was busy cleaning around the house when he heard someone moaning in pain (he has super hearing abilities) then he left what he was doing and he went to the room Kazi was in and he found her moaning in pain.....she still had her eyes closed but she was feeling extreme pain. He then took the Morphine drug and he injected it on her IV and as soon as the morphine entered her body she stopped moving and moaning in pain and laid still he then threw away the used syringe and he huffed looking annoyed and he walked out\*\*\*

Castiel: Juana better be in hell so when I get there when I finally die I'll give her a piece of my fucken mind

\*\*\*he said to himself pouring himself a glass of whiskey and he gulped it all down \*\*\*

Castiel: I don't even know why I saved her.....i mean now I have to wait until she heals for her to fall pregnant again....useless....that's what she is.....fucken useless!

\*\*\*he put the glass down\*\*\*

Castiel: YOU HEAR THAT JUANA....YOU BETTER MAKE SURE YOU WENT TO HEAVEN OR ELSE I'LL MAKE HELL TOO SMALL FOR THE TWO OF US NX!

\*\*\*he shouted looking angry then he sighed and he took his laptop and he sat down....he switched it on and he tapped on a folder and a live stream video was playing....he watched Buhle pacing up and down in her bedroom then he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: wrong choice little girl....that hitman of yours is gonna kill you I mean he killed his own father so imagine what he would do to you

\*\*\* he said looking at Buhle pacing up and down then he went to the video that showed Menzi's study room and he saw him on the phone busy pacing up and down shouting and he shook his head\*\*\*

Castiel: pussy! if you killed that bitch along with your father none of this would've happened...wait what am I saying Kazi belong to me...I fucken own her so tough boy

\*\*\* he laughed a bit then he went to the kids room and they weren't there then he went to the play room and they were watching cartoons on Tv with the nanny watching them then he swallowed hard and he closed the laptop....his mind went to his late son.... to how he made another bad choice....first he chose Juana over his brother Ruslan and then he chose Juana again over his son and now she's dead leaving him all alone.....he wished he made different choices but it was too late and also impossible to go back in time to rectify his mistakes\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck....

\*\*\*he said rubbing his face then he laid on the couch and he closed his eyes and imagine his life before he met Juana\*\*\*

.  
. .  
\*\*\*AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE\*\*\*

\*\*\* Mbali was busy preparing lunch for Ray Ruslan Mj and Mateo and herself when Mj walked in the kitchen and he cleared his throat....he still couldn't believe how beautiful and young Mbali was yes he has a crush on her but that's where it ends cause he knows Ray will literally kill him if he even try that shit on her cause he has seen how much he loves her and how obsessed he is with her and plus his heart beats for someone else\*\*\*

Mbali: hey you good

\*\*\*he cleared his throat again\*\*\*

Mj: ummm yeah

Mbali: oohk but it looks like something is troubling you.....you do know that a problem shared is half solved right

\*\*\*she said smiling at him and his heart melted and he found himself smiling too then he quickly stopped smiling and he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Mj: i....its complicated

Mbali: then uncomplicated it for me then

\*\*\*she said raising her eyebrow at him and he swallowed hard cause she looked hot doing that\*\*\*

Mj: umm its....ummm ok fine....the thing is back home im in love with some girl

\*\*\*she smiled-frowned at him\*\*\*

Mbali: how is that complicated....wait....ooh my God don't tell me she's pregnant...ooh my God your brothers are gonna skin you a....

\*\*\*he interrupted her\*\*\*

Mj: what?....no...no...no its not that geez

Mbali: phewww ok umm so what's wrong

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Mj: well let's say her family and my own hate each other



Mbali: ooooh I see

Mj: yeah so ummm next year she's also gonna come study this side and I wonder how will my brothers take it when they find out about us

\*\*\*Mbali sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: well Ray and I have been there...done that...owned it and now we good

Mj: wait your family hated Big Ray too

\*\*\*he asked surprised and she laughed a bit which made him smile a bit looking at her\*\*\*

Mbali: hate is an understatement Mj....one time they even shot him when they found out about us

\*\*\*Mj's eyes popped out and she laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: mmmh but we never gave up on us and look at us now

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Mj: I don't wanna get shot or beaten up Flower... I bruise too easily

\*\*\*Mbali laughed out loud\*\*\*

Mbali: well if you truly love her then it will all be worth it Mj....you might even take a bullet for her

\*\*\*he shook his head dramatically\*\*\*

Mj: and put it where? im sorry but im not a movie star or a white man Flower im black so no taking a bullet for a girl or moving mountains for her or even swimming to the middle of the ocean for her....im too cute to be doing all that

\*\*\*Mbali was busy laughing\*\*\*

Mbali: ah ah Mj

Mj: what?...look a no be Romeo na any of those fools that died for love ooo....do you know how delicious yam fufu pepe soup and many other Nigerian foods are....no no no and not forgetting plain pap sour pap chicken feet and tripe and skop (sheep head) ooh and cho....chot low (chotlo - traditionally cooked red stew meat)

\*\*\*Mbali was in stitches....he let her laugh until she calmed down and she wiped off her tears\*\*\*

Mj: you done laughing at me now

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: I can't with you Mj....damn you are crazy and I like it

\*\*\*he laughed and she joined him\*\*\*

Mbali: so what happened between your families?

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Mj: umm her sister...ok let me put it this way...mom and dad once married a wife for brother Heath without his knowledge and when they brought her here all hell broke loose....then they took her back to her parents' house and it got heated and apparently words and insults were exchanged and now they hate each other to a point that they even don't do business together anymore

\*\*\*she frowned at him\*\*\*

Mbali: wait you mean that Nigerian girl Naledi told me about

Mj: ummm yeah

Mbali: mara Mj

Mj: its this stupid heart Flower...

\*\*\*he said beating his chest\*\*\*

Mj: I tried to fight it but damn this stupid thing just won't listen

Mbali: OMG Heath is gonna flip

\*\*\*well she didn't know so will Ray cause he once slept with Adanma\*\*\*

Mj: well he's not into her at all

Mbali: but she made Naledi cry dude and worse part she was pregnant

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Mj: but Mercy is not like that Flower....she's humble loving and kindhearted....well she's more like you sister Star and sister Amo so she'll fit in nicely

Mbali: ok but the big question is....is she really worth it and if she is then I'll support you and try to protect you from your brother but if not then don't open old wounds because of someone you don't see a future will

\*\*\*he sighed and he sat down then she patted his shoulder\*\*\*

Mbali: its part of growing up dude ask me I've been there

\*\*\*then she continued to prepare lunch as he sat there thoughtfully.....then he looked at her and his eyes landed on her appetizing ass and he swallowed hard and quickly looked away\*\*\*

Mj: ummm thanks for the talk I'll...I'll surely think things through before I do something I'll regret

Mbali: good

\*\*\*she nodded looking at him with a smile on her face\*\*\*

Mj: ummm I'll...I'll just go to the...to the guys

\*\*\*then he walked out and breathed out loud then he went upstairs\*\*\*

Mj: shit I need to leave this house

INSERT.....03

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

Gogo: yini ofuna ukusitshela Thandi? (what is it that you wanted to tell us Thandi?)

\*\*\*Thandi cleared her throat and she looked down while playing with her fingers\*\*\*

Mkhulu: Thandi kwenzekani? (Thandi what's going on?)

Thandi: ummm ngiyazi ukuthi ngabe nginitshele futhi ngiyaxolisa (ummm I know I should've told you and im sorry)

Gogo: usitshela ukuthini? (told us what?)

Thandi: ukuthi uJames name sahlukana and that we both even moved on ngaphambi ngokuba afe (ummm that James and I broke up and that we both even moved on before he died)

Mkhulu: heh?

Thandi: he cheated and got Omphile's aunt pregnant....the same woman who killed him

Mkhulu: ini? (what)

\*\*\*she told them everything that happened except for her new relationship with Ruslan cause she was scared they might judge her somehow but at least she gave them a hint about both of them "moving on" \*\*\*

Gogo: ooh nkosi yam (ooh my God)

\*\*\*she said with her hands on top of her head\*\*\*

Thandi: ngiyaxolisa gogo no mkhulu for not telling you....my mind was all over the place and when they called me and told me James was killed by his girlfriend and that im supposed to sit on the mattress for him that's when I realized that I should've told both families of our break up

Mkhulu: so his family didn't know about the other woman

Thandi: his brother knew and my brothers also knew but I told them to stay out of it and that I'll handle it then he left for Limpopo and since then I haven't seen him

Mkhulu: yeses!

Thandi: then I heard ukuthi he came back but he never not even once came to see the boys he would only call them and make promises that he would come see them then he wouldn't show up

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Gogo: what did I say to you when you told me James proposed Thandi?

\*\*\*Thandi looked down and she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Gogo: ngikhuluma nawe Thandi (im talking to you Thandi)...what did I say?

\*\*\*she asked her with a raised voice\*\*\*

Thandi: ngiyaxolisa gogo (im sorry Granny)

Gogo: I warned you Thandi but you didn't believe me angithi ( right)

Thandi: im sorry

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Gogo: you could've avoided everything and now you have James family to deal with and you know how they are and on top of it ugogo wakhe ungunthakathi ( his grandmother is a witch)

\*\*\*Thandi just continued to cry\*\*\*

Gogo: heh heh "James and I have been through the worst and we will surely survive whatever is coming".....are you surviving it now mmmmh?

Mkhulu: mkami yehlisa umoya (calm down my wife)

Gogo: hai these children baya dina man nx (are too much man nx)

Thandi: ngiyaxolisa gogo....please forgive me im sorry

\*\*\*she pleaded with her\*\*\*

Gogo: so what now.....are you going to sit on the mattress like they told you to?

\*\*\*Thandi shook her head no\*\*\*

Thandi: no

\*\*\*Mkhulu sighed\*\*\*

Mkhulu: what about the boys?

Thandi: I wont stop them from paying their last respects to their father

\*\*\*Mkhulu nodded\*\*\*

Gogo: yazi Thandi angazi nokuthi ngithini kuwe ( you know Thandi I don't even know what to say to you)

Thandi: ngiyaxolisa gogo (im sorry) ....i wish I listened to you and mkhulu and the worst part is I think I stayed with him and took in all his nonsense because I wanted to give the boys a family something I never got to experience when I was growing up and now my sons are heartbroken and were way hurt before he was even killed and I don't know how to take away their pain

\*\*\*she said sobbing and her grandmother sighed\*\*\*

Gogo: its ok...come here

\*\*\*Thandi got up and went to sit next to her grandmother and she hugged her tight and Thandi just let it all out with her grandmother comforting her\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Kazi moved her eyeballs around for some time with her eyes shut and after some time she slowly opened her eyes and blinked a couple of times until she regained a clear vision and she looked around\*\*\*

Castiel: take it easy woman....your stitches haven't healed

\*\*\*he said getting up and he poured water into a glass and helped her drink some water with a straw and he adjusted the bed and fixed the pillows for her to lay comfortable\*\*\*

Kazi: where...where am i?

\*\*\*she said with a husky voice and Castiel just put his hands inside his pockets and looked at her\*\*\*

Kazi: you....i remember you.....the elevator

Castiel: sharp mind I see

\*\*\*he said with a straight face\*\*\*

Kazi: where...where am I and...and who are you

Castiel: well you in my house and im Castiel

\*\*\*her heart started beating fast and her hand went to stomach\*\*\*

Castiel: they didn't make it

\*\*\*her eyes popped out as she looked at him and her bottom lip trembled and tears started coming out with her chest visibly moving up and down\*\*\*

Castiel: and to clear things up....im not responsible for your miscarriage "if I may call it that" your baby-daddy's wife is the one responsible....she send thugs to kill you and your now dead babies

\*\*\*tears continued to run down her cheeks until she let out a heart breaking cry....she screamed holding her stomach not even caring about the pain then Castiel just walked out leaving her crying her eyes out\*\*\*

.  
.br/.

Castiel: eat!

\*\*\*he said giving her a plate with some home cooked meal and she didn't move an inch or even look at him...it was late in the afternoon\*\*\*

Castiel: lady I said eat!

\*\*\*she continued to stare into space and he clenched his jaws getting annoyed\*\*\*

Castiel: fine.... but just know that you have a few hours to stay like a zombie just like you are now but tomorrow if you ignore me like you are doing now I'll literally force food down your throat and if you think im joking just know that I don't joke around

\*\*\*then he put the plate on top of the side drawer and he walked out then Kazi blinked and she inhaled loudly as tears gushed out and she just let it all out crying painfully....

Downstairs Castiel watched Buhle on his laptop packing her clothes in a travelling bag and he knew what she was about to do...then he took his burner phone and he dialed her number and watched as she picked her phone and hesitantly answered it\*\*\*

Buhle: hello

Castiel: how does it feel to have blood in your hands Buhle?

\*\*\*he watched her gasp with her hands shaking and he chuckled\*\*\*

Buhle: who...who are you and what the fuck are you talking about?

Castiel: that's not important lady but what is important is me having a recording of one of your hitman confessing before he died painfully

\*\*\*he lied to her and he saw her sit down on the edge of the bed and he smirked\*\*\*

Buhle: i...I don't know what you are talking about....if you have nothing to do with your life then go masturbate or something nx

\*\*\*she dropped the call and Castiel laughed then he watched her pacing up and down with her hands on top of her head then he send her a message and it read;

"since you think im kidding then how about I send the recording to your dearest husband and lets see if he'll have the same thoughts as you....just so you know Kazi's babies died so you are a dead woman lady....i mean D...E...A...D dead!"

\*\*\*then he also put in laughing emojis and he send the sms to her and watched her sink down to the floor as she read the sms....the two guys she hired to kill Kazi were killed brutally and she knew its possible that they confessed to be spared cause whoever killed them seemed dangerous that even the police are shocked at the state the bodies and the car were...then his phone rang and he chuckled and answered it\*\*\*

Castiel: lady im not done with jerking myself up you know

Buhle: what...what do you want?

\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*

Castiel: I'll let you know in due time so in the meantime don't even think of running away cause I have eyes and ears everywhere....just be a good wife to that bull of yours and pray he doesn't find out that you killed his babies...you better answer the call when I call or else....

\*\*\*he chuckled then he dropped the call and he watched her crying with her body shaking and he closed his laptop and he sat back and smirked then he closed his eyes\*\*\*

Castiel: Juana you better talk to that useless woman YOU forced me to nurse back to health to eat or she'll join you wherever you are and you know im not joking....talk to her or I'll traumatize her to a point of no returned nx

\*\*\*he said still with his eyes closed\*\*\*

Castiel: and tell her im not a nice man and when I say I'll do something I do it for real so if she doesn't snap out of it by tomorrow....

\*\*\*he chuckled a "she doesn't fucken know how I can get" chuckle \*\*\*

Castiel: she needs to heal fast because I want that baby so talk to her

\*\*\*then he hummed an ancient song his mother used to hum whenever she was trying to calm herself down\*\*\*

.  
. .  
.

\*\*\*\*AT THANDI'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Three days ago James' aunt called gogo and told them they are coming for a meeting with the vilakazis since Thandi told her when she called to ask why she haven't arrived as yet in Limpopo and Thandi told her she won't sit on the mattress for James cause she broke up with James so the aunt told Gogo they will arrive three days later to hold a meeting with them... and now its three days later and they are all sitting in the lounge it's the Mashabas ( James aunt Joe his eldest brother Jackson and James' two uncles ) and the Vilakazis ( gogo mkhulu Jabu Ray Heath and Ruslan) Thandi's mother refused to come to the meeting cause she said she used to warn Thandi about James but she thought she knew it all so she's not getting involved cause she has never acknowledged their "supposed" marriage and she didn't even chow her lobola money so those who did ( being gogo and mkhulu) they should see how they handle everything.....As for Ruslan well he didn't give a fuck about not being family....he just came in and sat down leaving Jabu and Heath chuckling while Gogo and Mkhulu saw right through him and they just shook their heads and let him because deep down they knew he and Thandi were seeing each other and that he's stubborn....as for Gogo she knew he practiced white-witchcraft and that deep down he's a good man so she decided to stay out of it and let fate play its part \*\*\*

Mkhulu: now that we are all here we can start

\*\*\* Joe cleared his throat\*\*\*

Joe: askies madala ( sorry old man) but I know everyone here except for this guy is he family?



Ray: are you here to get to know our family members or something else brought you here man

\*\*\*he said with a firm tone and Joe raised his eyebrow at him\*\*\*

Joe: look here man we are all family here so I wanted to know if he's also family

Jabu: o reng wena snai....o family ya mang wena....bona mo o sa tsamaya o botsa batho gore o family ya rona verstaan ntja and dai man ke family ya rona so zipa dai molomo wa gao ( what are you saying you fool....you are part of who's family?....look here don't go around telling people that you are part of our family do you understand dog and that man is our family member so shut up) and let's get this over and done with nx

Joe: don't talk to m...

James uncle: Joel miyela man ( keep quiet man)

\*\*\*Joe kept quiet and so did Jabu but they gave each other nasty looks and Heath chuckled\*\*\*

Uncle1: you can continue Vilakazi

Mkhulu: well since you all called for this meeting Mashaba you should start

Aunt: im the one who called for this meeting so I'll speak....what I want is for Thandi to tell me to my face why she isn't in Limpopo as we speak mourning for her husband like she should

\*\*\*Ruslan looked at the aunt and he immediately disliked her....the aura around her felt evil and as for Thandi she looked at her grandma and her grandmother nodded then Thandi cleared her throat and looked at James' aunt\*\*\*

Thandi: like I told you aunty I cant sit on the mattress for James cause we broke up way before he was killed by HIS BABY-MAMA

\*\*\*she emphasized the last part\*\*\*

Aunt: broke up?....is that your excuse

Thandi: its not an excuse aunty it's a fact...you can even ask Joe cause he knows we broke up

\*\*\*the aunt clapped her hands once laughing and Ruslan clenched his jaws looking at her\*\*\*

Aunt: yah neh hai James otese xilo ntsena a re yi ngwansate wa yena....xilo ntsena ai....yesees voJames na vona va famba va doba doba man yesees nx (James brought us a useless thing as a wife....a useless thing....yesees James decided to go around picking useless things man)

Jabu: askies

\*\*\*He said moving to the edge of his seat\*\*\*

Jabu: uthini? ( what did you say?)

\*\*\*he said looking at the aunt and she made a disgusted face\*\*\*

Gogo: hai Jabu

Jabu: wooh gogo let this kokwane repeat what she said about Thandi

Uncle2: can we stop all these and go back to the reason we are all here assomblief (please)

Jabu: wooh uncle vag (uncle wait).....

\*\*\*then he looked at the aunty\*\*\*

Jabu: eeh kokwane ( ey old lady) I said repeat what you said about Thandi

Jackson: don't talk to my aunt like that boy

\*\*\*he said with a scratchy voice and Jabu looked at him with a pissed off look\*\*\*

Mkhulu: ok boys stop it assomblief ( please)....this is not the time or place

Jabu: fine Khulus but die mense ba sa tla mo from Giyani ba kgokgolloga ka maShangaan bag a bona batlo re tella mo....a se Giyani mo a re loye hierso...mo re go tlhaba ka bullet wa no swa once (these people shouldn't come here all the way from Giyani with their Shangaan bag to come mess with us...this is not Giyani we don't do witchcraft here....we shoot you and you die immediately)

Joe: wanyela san (fuck you boy)

Heath: go nnyela mmao san ( fuck your mother boy )

\*\*\*he said with a straight face and Joe got up\*\*\*

Joe: o reng ka my oulady san ( what did you say about my mother boy)

\*\*\*Heath also got up and Jackson got up too and so did Ray...as for Ruslan his eyes were on Thandi the whole time reading her emotions cause he wanted her as calm as possible\*\*\*

Heath: wena o reng ka broer ya ka ( you...what did you say about my brother)

Ray: ok ya'll need to settle down...now!

\*\*\*he said warning them and Mkhulu shook his head looking down and they all sat down giving each other nasty looks\*\*\*

Uncle1: ok lets discuss what brought us here so we can leave before things get out of hand

\*\*\*he was one of those sophisticated men and he was well off\*\*\*

Aunt: wait bhut Mzamane....jaha leri rere yini yi sisi wa mina? ( wait brother Mzamane...what did this boy say about my sister)

\*\*\*she said getting up taking off her shoulder scarf ( a don't touch) and she tied it around her waist\*\*\*

Mzamane: will you calm down!

Aunt: calm down?...calm down? look here I won't sit here and listen to this thugs insult my late sister while I sit around

Heath: so what are you gonna do mmmmh...fight us

\*\*\*he said with a bored look on his face and the aunt chuckled\*\*\*

Aunt: heh heh ok..ok...well then listen here little girl

\*\*\*she said looking at Thandi\*\*\*

Aunt: ...this house belongs to my late son so is the car you are driving so get up and pack you rugs and get the hell out!

Gogo: woah stop right there...first of all your son wasn't rich and that car you claim as your son's was bought by my grandson Heath and he gave it to Thandi as a birthday gift and everything that is inside this house most of them were house....heh Thandi what do they call it again?

Thandi: house warming gifts gogo

\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*

Gogo: ehe khona lokhu...house warming gifts so don't talk as if your son was some rich guy my granddaughter was feeding off

\*\*\*she said getting worked up\*\*\*

Mkhulu: mkami yehlisa umoya (my wife calm down)

Gogo: baba I won't sit and watch this woman attack my granddaughter.....i kept quiet when he kept on hurting Thandi countless times and his family did nothing about it and I thought maybe is because she was a girlfriend and now even though he came and paid ilobolo for her he still hurt her by sleeping around and he also got the girl pregnant and instead of understanding why she can't sit on the mattress you come here to insult her

Jabu: batshele gogo!

Aunt: maybe she wasn't woman enough that's why he went outside

\*\*\*Thandi closed her eyes tight as that hit her hard and Ruslan got up\*\*\*

Ruslan: ENOUGH!

\*\*\*he said looking angry\*\*\*

Ruslan: IF YOU HAVE NOTHING BETTER TO SAY THEN KEEP QUIET!

\*\*\* He said looking at the aunt and they all kept quiet.....he also kept quiet a bit trying to calm himself down\*\*\*

Ruslan: first of all your son was a useless piece of shit he hurt Thandi more than you can even count...he was a serial cheat and you as his family never called him to order he even hurt his sons by constantly lying to them about coming to see them so don't come here and talk nonsense!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice and Thandi wiped her tears that kept falling\*\*\*

Ray: Ruu...

Ruslan: you should be here begging Thandi to help ya'll hide the kind of man your son was which is a useless no-backbone whatsoever weak piece of shit and not what you are doing now

Mzamane: she should help us?....hey wena she's our daughter in law so don't stand there and talk nonsense

\*\*\*Uncle number two got up\*\*\*

Uncle: excuse me I need a smoke

\*\*\*then he walked out shaking his head\*\*\*

Mkhulu: people please calm down!

Aunt: calm down for what.....you are all sitting there pretending as if Thandi is the first woman to get hurt...we all know marriage is no walk in a park....yes James hurt her so what!

Jabu: SO WHAT?.... UTHI SO WHAT?....AWUNYI PERHAPS HEH ?

Jackson: don't talk to my aunt like that boy this is your final warning!

Jabu: or what?

\*\*\*he said getting up\*\*\*

Jackson: ni ta ku tshova nenge mfo ( I'll break your leg man)

\*\*\*he threatened him\*\*\*

Ruslan: hey.....just because you have muscles doesn't mean you are strong and just because you are an ex-military man doesn't mean you are all that...there are useless and dumb stupid men in the military so shut the hell up and sit down!

\*\*\* Jackson took a step closer to Ruslan and Ruu clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ruslan: Ray take this cockroach off my face before I squash it

\*\*\*he said through his teeth and Ray got up and stood between them\*\*\*

Ray: sit!

\*\*\*he said to Jackson\*\*\*

Jackson: don't fucken tell me what to do

Mzamane: Jackson tshama hanse man (Jackson sit down)...sit!

Ray: yeah Jackson you heard your uncle...sit!

Aunt: whose side are you on Mzamane heh...so you're ok with these thugs disrespecting us like this?

Mzamane: we didn't come here to fight man...we came here to know why Thandi refused to mourn for her husband not all this fighting

\*\*\*the aunt clapped her hands once and she chuckled \*\*\*\*

Mkhulu: thank you Mashaba....Sambulo no Ruslan sit down too

\*\*\*they slowly did looking at Jackson who was angry cause Ruslan disrespected him\*\*\*

Mzamane: now Thandi you do know traditionally that you are still our daughter in law so the fact that you and James broke up doesn't mean anything when you two broke up you should've informed both families first

Thandi: if I was the one dead would you say the same thing to James uncle?

\*\*\*she said looking at him and Ruslan smirked\*\*\*

Thandi: Joe here knew everything that was going on between James and I and as an elder brother he didn't even bother calling James into order or to even call a family meeting for us...when he called to tell me about James' passing he said his baby mama killed him that she finally killed him meaning he knew where James was all along...

Joe: hey don't blame me for your failed marriage ok

\*\*\*Thandi laughed bitterly\*\*\*

Thandi: you all never liked me or accepted me as James wife.....

\*\*\*she turned to the aunt\*\*\*

Thandi: you aunty you used to insult me every chance you got

\*\*\*then she looked at Joe\*\*\*

Thandi: and you Joe you used to remind me how your family warned James about marrying someone like me and that I don't "fit" in your family

\*\*\*she said with tears running down her cheeks and Ruslan's hands started shaking with anger cause he doesn't want to see Thandi cry and Ray saw him then he whispered that he should calm down\*\*\*

Thandi: and now you are here forcing me to mourn for a man that never respected me that never even acknowledged my worth

\*\*\*the aunt laughed\*\*\*

Aunt: vona la sesinyana you are not the first bride to be hated by the in laws and you are not the first bride to be hurt by her husband and you also are not the first and wont be the last bride to be cheated on...now here is the thing it's either you accept to do right by your late husband or we disown you and your kids and im sure you know what that means

Mkhulu: haibo!

\*\*\*he exclaimed\*\*\*

Gogo: mihlolo!

\*\*\*Heath chuckled shaking his head and Jabu shook his head not believing what she was saying and as for Ruslan he was looking at Thandi while Ray was looking at him to see his reaction\*\*\*

Thandi: you can't do that

Aunt: yes we can now what is it gonna be?

Gogo: niya hlanya manje....what kind of a family are you mmmmh?

\*\*\*she said getting worked up\*\*\*

Aunt: now what is it gonna be sesinyana and know that us disowning you and your sons means even if your boys someday will need an ancestral ceremony to be done for them we won't do it in fact you will be banned from setting your feet akaya (back home)

\*\*\*then Thandi started crying\*\*\*

Gogo: so now you are using her children to do what you want uyiskhohlakali somfazi wena.....a despicable woman!

Mkhulu: Mashaba

\*\*\*he said looking at uncle Mzamane but the uncle just raised his right eyebrow with an attitude then Ruslan got up\*\*\*

Ruslan: gramps leave them....these people came with an agenda in fact they came with plan A and plan B....with plan A they used James house and other stupid things to make Thandi agree to what they want and they failed cause she's not budging.....and their plan B is using her sons which is low even for useless people like them

Jackson: just shut up and sit down man cause you talking nonsense

\*\*\*Ruslan gave him an intimidating stare until Jackson looked away\*\*\*

Jabu: Mshikaro waitisi leShangaan le le thoma go ntlatsa phinya le melomo ekare o sunne mbaola (Mshikaro this Shangaan is starting to piss me off with his big lips as if he kissed mbaola "a metal container for holding burning coals" )

Ruslan: from what I know gramps is that this ugly woman as James' mother can sit on that mattress if Thandi refuses right

\*\*\*Mkhulu nodded\*\*\*

Gogo: yes my son she can so I don't understand why she's doing all this nx....uyi skhohlakali somfazi lo nx (she's a despicable woman)

Ray: that's because she's power hungry and a control freak

Aunt: askies?

Ruslan: and she holds all these men by their balls

Jackson: fuck you...you hear me fuck you!

Joe: how dare you insult us like this?

Mzamane: now I see why you told James not to marry this thing nx

Aunt: well since it looks like you made your decision sesinyana I want you to pack maguja a wena (your things) and get out of my son's house

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled and Mkhulu shook his head and he got up and walked out then Ruslan went to a crying Thandi and he helped her up and he went to gogo and helped her up too\*\*\*

Gogo: uyabona wena skhohlakali somfazi (you see you evil woman)...your day will come you...

\*\*\*Ray interrupted her\*\*\*

Ray: Gogo don't exchange words with witches...you are prayerful woman and a respected one at that so don't taint yourself with this dirty thing

Aunt: GET OUT....GO AND PACK YOUR RUGS AND LEAVE MY SON'S HOUSE YOU PATHETIC THING....HUMA! (leave)

Ruslan: Tee go with gogo and pack your clothes and the boys clothes too

\*\*\*she nodded while wiping her tears as they kept on falling and Gogo went with her to her bedroom\*\*\*

Jabu: lena le le three le marete ( you three dickheads) you gonna pay for this....le e gatile ko moseleng dimpya ke lena( you messed with the wrong one you useless dogs)... by the time he's done with you...

\*\*\*he pointed at Ruslan\*\*\*

Jabu: even your ancestors won't recognize you....and the fact that im telling you all this ka sekgowa means im dead serious

\*\*\*then he walked out\*\*\*

Jackson: cockroaches don't scare us boy ha te doomer te fa ( we spray them with doom and they die)

\*\*\*he said looking at Ruslan and Heath laughed then he got up and started whistling with his hands in his pockets\*\*\*

Heath: you know big Ray im trying to calm down so Caesar doesn't come out but this fucker keeps on pressing my wrong buttons

\*\*\*he said chuckling\*\*\*

Heath: but its all good....our day will come right?

Ray: you bet it will

\*\*\*then he went after Thandi and Gogo leaving Ruslan Ray and the Mashabas\*\*\*

Aunt: you don't scare me boy

\*\*\*she said looking at Ruslan\*\*\*

Ruslan: በጣም ጥሩ የሆነ ሰብስቦል! (you should be scared)

\*\*\*he said in the forbidden language and his eyes changed from his normal colour to light green then they went back to normal and the Mashabas felt cold shills run down their spines\*\*\*

Ray: you shouldn't have used the boys to hurt Thandi....you shouldn't have

\*\*\*then he leaned back on the couch and he looked at them as they looked at Ruslan looking a bit spooked\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*OUTSIDE\*\*\*\*

Jabu: dimpya tse (those dogs) don't know me Khulus...especially lebrakane le le ba reng ke Jackson le seriba sa mpya gape le melomo ekare o gotse a letsa diprompteta nx rubbish ( especially that small dog called Jackson with a big forehead and big lips as if he grew up blowing on trumpets )



\*\*\*Mkhulu just looked down and he shook his head laughing and James' uncle joined him...they were standing together on the veranda with James' uncle smoking\*\*\*

Uncle2: be careful man...valoya vano lavaya ( they do witchcraft)

Jabu: mxm a dinchikini dimpya tsele nna (mxm they don't scare me)

Mkhulu: like Ruslan said they came here with an agenda Jabulani

Uncle2: and the only reason im here with them is because our mother forced me to be part of all this nonsense....and those two don't even like me they just tolerate me cause we shared the same womb...a ne loye mina ( I don't do witchcraft) so I don't qualify to be in their circle

\*\*\*Jabu looked at him surprised\*\*\*

Uncle: my advice....give them James' things since Thandi refused to do what they want or to be controlled by them or else they might hurt Thandi using the boys remember those boys have James' blood running through their veins so its easy to bewitch them

\*\*\*Mkhulu sighed\*\*\*

Mkhulu: yeses angikholelwa ukuthi lokhu kwenzeka (I can't believe this is happening)

Uncle: money or peace of mind your choice.... and even if you choose peace of mind still make sure Thandi and the boys are protected and I hope you know what I mean

\*\*\*then he continued to smoke with Jabu staring at him shocked\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Kazi was just staring into space after her crying session when she heard a voice whispering next to her\*\*\*

Voice: Kazi!

\*\*\* she blinked and turned her head and there was no one then she sighed thinking she was now losing her mind but then the voice whispered again\*\*\*

Voice: Kazi.... everything is going to be alright please eat....

\*\*\*she quickly looked around but she was all alone....her heart then started beating fast\*\*\*

Voice: eat or he'll kill you you are no use to him when you are weak....eat please....

\*\*\*she tried to move but she felt pain and she laid there shaking with her eyes wondering around\*\*\*

INSERT.....04

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*Castiel was at the mall he went to buy groceries since now he can't only feed off blood since Kazi is there so he's gonna have to eat solid food for his skin to seem normal...anyway after buying groceries he decided to go buy toiletries and clothes for Kazi cause he can't stomach the thought of her wearing Juana's clothes after his shopping spree he felt his presence...his stomach knotted and he swallowed hard his eyes wondered around until they landed on him...He was with two boys and a woman and he still looked good well better than good cause he looked like he's been hitting the gym for some time then he saw him stop walking as if he's suddenly frozen and he knew he felt his presence too then he walked away blending in with the crowd making sure he doesn't see him\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck he's here....wait are those boys his and the woman is she his wife...fuck!

\*\*\*he said to himself but then he stopped as he felt his presence getting closer and closer and he quickly went inside a boutique for woman's clothes that was closer to him and he hid there with his heart pounding hard against his chest and he pretended to be looking for something to buy....he then peeped to see if he was still around and he saw him standing there looking around and he swallowed hard cause he missed him so damn much but he knew he might kill him if he even shows himself for double crossing him\*\*\*

Castiel: leave Mahamadou!

\*\*\*he spoke with him using his mind something they were taught by their late mother\*\*\*

Ruslan: so it's really you....you've been here all along you bastard

\*\*\*Castiel swallowed hard\*\*\*

Castiel: just go about your business and pretend that this shit never happened

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: show yourself man or are you now some scared little bitch

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: rather a scared little bitch than a dead one little bro

Ruslan: where is the girl Castiel

Castiel: I don't know what you are talking about

Ruslan: you picked the wrong one and now beasts are after you and you know beasts and vampires don't mix...now where the hell is that girl?

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: there are no beasts here Madou only small town witchcraft and gangsterism

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: nope I personally know a family of real beasts and they are looking for that girl

\*\*\*Castiel frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: you're lying man you want me to come out so you can kill me im not stupid Madou ok

Ruslan: her baby daddy is a hitman to the beast family and they are coming for you and believe me its just a matter of time

\*\*\*Castiel kept quiet thinking\*\*\*

Ruslan: Castiel!

\*\*\*he continued to keep quiet\*\*\*

Ruslan: Cass!

Castiel: why are you telling me all this Madou I mean you hate me

Ruslan: so that I will be the one to kill you that's why...

Castiel thought as much

Ruslan: now let that girl go

Castiel: I'd rather have the beasts' blood on my hands than my own brother's blood

Ruslan: Cass don't do this

Castiel: look man im sorry for choosing Juana over you and guess what karma dealt with me by taking her so don't make me fight you just go about your business and let me deal with my shit

Ruslan: she....she's dead?

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled bitterly\*\*\*

Castiel: yeah and now im all alone...no family.... nothing and that girl can change all that

Ruslan: no no no Castiel listen to me....

\*\*\*he interrupted him\*\*\*

Castiel: if the beasts succeed in killing me which I doubt they will then bury me upside down so that the world can kiss my fossil ass....adios brother

\*\*\*then he looked around the shop and everyone was minding their business then he checked the security cameras and they weren't facing him then he apparated from where he was to his car in the underground parking lot and he loaded his things in the car got in and drove off\*\*\*

Ruslan: shit!

\*\*\*then he took out his phone and dialed Thandi's phone\*\*\*

Thandi: hey

Ruslan: amour where are you and the boys now

Thandi: at Woolworths

Ruslan: ok im on my way

Thandi: ok

\*\*\*they ended the call and he dialed Ray's numbers\*\*\*

Ray: bros

Ruslan: I just had a run in with Castiel

Ray: wait what?

Ruslan: yeah...well I didn't see him but I felt his presence and we mind-communicated and he does have the girl and he doesn't give a damn that the Khumalo's are looking for her

Ray: shit!

Ruslan: I think we should break into the girl's house and get one of her things that she usually uses so I can use it to track her down and maybe I might find out where she is

Ray: ok I'll take care of the break in and you'll handle the rest

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok....i gotta go we will talk later

Ray: ok

\*\*\*then they ended the call and Ruslan went to Thandi and the boys and when Mpilo saw him he ran to him and Ruslan picked him up and they went to Thandi and Mpendulo\*\*\*

Ruslan: you good

\*\*\*Thandi nodded and he kissed the top of her head and he went to Mpendulo\*\*\*

Ruslan: you see anything you like champ

\*\*\*Mpendulo just shrugged and Ruslan sighed....he was worried about him and the sudden change of his mood....well he knew the reason behind his change of moods but he was worried that his father's death might turn him into someone bitter and with anger issues cause he hardly says anything these days and he also could see that something else other than his father's death troubles him then he went to Thandi and he put Mpilo down\*\*\*

Ruslan: I need to have a talk with Mpe privately....im worried about him

\*\*\*Thandi sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: im also worried about him ....he hardly says anything these days

Ruslan: so you'll be good with Mr Pilot

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok

\*\*\*then he took out his black card and he gave it to her\*\*\*

Thandi: ummm Ruu I cant....

\*\*\*he interrupted her\*\*\*

Ruslan: you not about to reject my money amour just spoil yourself and Mr. pilot here and as for Mpe I got it covered ok

\*\*\*she sighed and nodded\*\*\*

Ruslan: call me when you are done

\*\*\*then he kissed her forehead and whispered to her\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you so damn much

\*\*\*he said with his one hand on her belly and she whispered that she loves him too then he crouched down \*\*\*

Ruslan: your mom is gonna buy you anything you want while I take Mpe to the restroom ok

\*\*\*Mpilo frowned\*\*\*

Mpilo: is he afraid to go there alone like me

\*\*\*Ruslan smiled and he nodded\*\*\*

Ruslan: remember I once told you that there are bad guys that look for kids that walk around alone inside the mall and they steal them

\*\*\*Mpilo nodded\*\*\*

Ruslan: so I don't want them to steal Mpe so im gonna take him to the restroom while you continue to shop with mom ok

Mpilo: ok

Ruslan: and don't leave her side ok

Mpilo: ok I promise I wont

Ruslan: that's my boy....and tell your mom to buy you that big toy truck you saw at that other shop ok

\*\*\*Mpilo smiled wide\*\*\*

Mpilo: really?

\*\*\*he said all excited and Ruslan nodded smiling the Mpilo hugged him and Ruslan laughed so did Thandi then she got emotional looking at how happy Mpilo is and how selfless and kindhearted Ruslan is\*\*\*

Ruslan: im sure you heard that mommy

\*\*\*she nodded and he kissed her forehead and he went to Mpe who was sitting down playing a game on his phone now\*\*\*

Ruslan: let's go champ

\*\*\*he put a pause on the game he was playing and looked up at him\*\*\*

Mpe: where?

Ruslan: you'll see...come lets go

\*\*\*he got up and followed Ruslan\*\*\*

Mpe: what about mom and Mpilo

Ruslan: we will catch up with them later

Mpe: ummm ok

\*\*\*they walked out of the shop\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*they bought everything Mpendulo wanted and now they were sitting at a restaurant Mpendulo ordered a burger and milkshake while Ruslan ordered a meaty meal with a glass of beer...Mpendulo looked excited with what he got and you could tell he couldn't wait to get home and try on the clothes and the gargets Ruslan bought for him too...as for Thandi and Mpilo they were at spurs enjoying their meal too and she was communicating with Ruslan all along\*\*\*

Ruslan: champ

Mpe: uncle

Ruslan: what's wrong

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Mpe: huh? ummm with what?

Ruslan: im not your mom Mpe so you don't have to pretend with me

Mpe: nothing is wrong with me now can we drop it please

\*\*\*Ruslan looked at him intensely\*\*\*

Ruslan: boy when you look at me what do you see

\*\*\*Mpendulo didn't look up at him\*\*\*

Ruslan: hey look at me!

\*\*\*he said with a stern voice and Mpendulo looked at him\*\*\*

Ruslan: I know something is bothering you and you gonna tell what it is

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone and Mpe looked down to his food\*\*\*

Ruslan: im waiting

Mpe: I heard mama and gogo talking and mama was crying

\*\*\* "shit" is what Ruslan thought\*\*\*

Ruslan: im listening

Mpe: that dad's family cut us off...more like they disowned us because mom didn't want to do what they want

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: and how does that make you feel

Mpe: angry at mom

\*\*\*Ruslan frowned\*\*\*

Ruslan: why?

Mpe: because if she did what they wanted her to do they wouldn't have disowned us

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: tell me here....whenever you don't do what your mom wants you to do does she disown you or "cut you off"

\*\*\*Mpe shook his head no\*\*\*

Ruslan: do you even know what they wanted her to do

\*\*\*he shook his head no\*\*\*

Ruslan: so if they told her to strip naked and run around the street just so they don't disown you three she should do it or if they said they want you and your little brother to move to Limpopo for good without her she should agree

Mpe: no....no she shouldn't

\*\*\*he said with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: Mpe you are the eldest son to your mom and it should be your job to make sure she's always happy and that no one makes her cry....do you like it when she cries

\*\*\*he shook his head no\*\*\*

Ruslan: remember you once told me you once heard your granny from your father's side of the family swearing at your mom over the phone when it was on loud speaker and after the call she cried

\*\*\*Mpendulo swallowed with tears filling his eyes when she remembered his grandmother's words and her mother's sobs\*\*\*

Ruslan: so now you can imagine what they said to her this time but instead of being there for her you are angry that she didn't do what they wanted her to do

\*\*\*Tears ran down his cheeks\*\*\*

Mpe: i...i

Ruslan: shhh its ok....listen here my boy im not gonna beat around the bush and lie to you.... your father's family don't like your mother cause they think she was with your dad for his money and they forgot that your mother's brothers swim in money....she accepted your father the way he was and she lived in a two bedroom house cause that's what your father could afford to buy and she never made him feel less of a man because of that....your uncles could've brought her a big house with a swimming pool and many bedrooms but she loved your father and didn't care about material things

\*\*\*Mpendulo swallowed hard\*\*\*



Ruslan: but your father's family doesn't see that all they want is your father's money and they are doing extreme things to make sure they hurt your mother because of that... look your mother is a special woman she's one in a million and she needs to be appreciated and not hurt ok

Mpendulo: ok

Ruslan: as for them disowning you don't worry they'll change their mind and I'll make sure of that and it looks like your other grandfather doesn't agree with them disowning you and your brother so relax

Mpendulo: im...im sorry

Ruslan: hey look just love your mom and never let anyone come between you your mother and little brother protect them and make sure they are always happy and you'll shame the devil ok

Mpendulo: ok

\*\*\*then he brushed his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you ok champ

Mpendulo: I love you too uncle

Ruslan: and always come to me whenever something is bothering you don't ever keep things to yourself or else you'll die in silence where else I could've helped you ok

\*\*\*Mpendulo nodded wiping his tears off\*\*\*

Ruslan: good now let's eat so we can go join your mother and little brother

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Castiel Walked inside the room Kazi was in and he went to open the curtain and window and he put shopping bags that had her toiletries and new clothes on top of a table\*\*\*

Castiel: have you snapped out of it lady?

\*\*\*Kazi swallowed hard and she didn't answer him...she wondered how does this guy expect her to snap out of losing her unborn babies just like that and why did he help her and save her life.... she wondered what he wanted from her cause he doesn't look like a "father Theresa" who goes around helping people without wanting anything in return\*\*\*

Kazi: are you going to kill me?

\*\*\*he raised his one eyebrow looking at her with a smirk on his face amused by her question\*\*\*

Castiel: should i?

\*\*\*she swallowed hard...."who says that" she thought\*\*\*

Castiel: should I?

\*\*\*she shook her head no\*\*\*

Castiel: ok then I won't....for now....so have you snapped out of it?

\*\*\*she nodded lying I mean who snaps out of losing their babies\*\*\*

Castiel: even though you are lying but I'll let it slide cause I have a lot on my mind

\*\*\*she swallowed again\*\*\*

Castiel: it's time for your bath....you fucken stink....im sure it's that pad you are wearing it's probably full by now....you didn't even try to get out of the bed to go change it what kind of a woman are you yeses

\*\*\*tears ran down her cheeks as he helped her sit up....she flinched with pain but he didn't care\*\*\*

Castiel: take it out...im going to run a bath for you

\*\*\*he went to the en-suit bathroom and she let out a sob feeling embarrassed hurt sad angry and broken\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*she was now clean and the bed sheets were also changed and she was eating slowly as he watched her\*\*\*

Castiel: why a married man?

\*\*\*she stopped eating but she didn't raise her head to look at him\*\*\*

Castiel: I ask and you answer lady.... trust me you don't wanna make me angry

\*\*\*she closed her eyes then she opened them again\*\*\*

Kazi: I didn't know he was married

Castiel: bullshit

Kazi: I found out when I showed my now ex friend his picture and she said he's her cousin's husband

Castiel: damn and let me guess she turned on you

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Castiel: but then im sure you continued to fuck him even after finding out he's married right

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Castiel: typical cliché stories of desperate bitches.... I mean couldn't you find someone single

\*\*\*tears ran down her cheeks\*\*\*

Castiel: and now the wife is gonna go to jail or probably be killed by that bull of hers just because she acted without thinking....i mean you were fucking her husband for fucks sake and you even fell pregnant as if you didn't know about fucken condoms or what you wanted to trap him with a baby?..... and now she's the one that's going to pay...nc nc nc

\*\*\*Kazi continued to cry as his words pierced through her already shattered heart\*\*\*

Castiel: you and that bull should be the ones going to jail for hurting that woman but no.... no wonder Juana refused to continue to live in this fucked up world it's because of people like you nx

\*\*\*then he looked at her\*\*\*

Castiel: eat!

\*\*\*she quickly picked her fork and continued to eat with tears all over her face\*\*\*

Castiel: if it's not your mother and stepfather selling you to me it's you fucking married men but then I guess you took after mommy cause she also fucked a married man and now she's married to him as the second wife.....wait was that your plan too

Kazi: please stop

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice and he chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: why im only telling you the truth

Kazi: plea....

\*\*\*she stopped and looked up at him\*\*\*

Kazi: wait my....my mother and stepfather sold me to you

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: yeah that's why you are here I own you....isn't it lovely?

\*\*\*he laughed and he got up and walked out leaving Kazi frozen....he went downstairs and cold air passed him and he stopped walking\*\*\*

Castiel: Juana...baby?

Voice: I have always seen the good side of you even though everyone saw a monster and it pains me to say that today I finally saw you for who you really are a monster

\*\*\*she whispered on his ear and he frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: wh...what?.....you don't mean that

Voice: you didn't have to say all that to her and just so you know...you hurt me more than you hurt her when you said all that to her...I can't believe I fell in love with a heartless person like you

\*\*\*he swallowed hard\*\*\*

Castiel: Juana you don't mean that

\*\*\*nothing\*\*\*

Castiel: Juana?...baby?

\*\*\*still nothing\*\*\*

Castiel: JUANA!

\*\*\*still nothing then he got angry\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck you Juana you hear me fuck you....im busy doing all this shit because of you I saved her life and im also taking care of her for you so what more do you want mmmh....what the fuck do you want from me you dead bitch!

\*\*\*he shouted looking angry and also hurt by what she said....she has never called him a monster before when she was alive\*\*\*

Castiel: im a monster right?....then watch as this monster deal with that fucken bitch

\*\*\*he turned and went back upstairs and he walked in and found Kazi crying and he grabbed her by her throat and his eyes changed color and became all black so did his skin it became pale instantly and his long fangs came out and Kazi screamed\*\*\*

Castiel: WHY DOES JUANA ALWAYS TAKE YOUR SIDE MMMM....SHE'S MY WIFE SO SHE'S SUPPOSED TO TAKE MY FUCKEN SIDE NOW WHY IS SHE ALWAYS DEFENDING YOU?

Kazi: Casstiel you....you are scaring me

\*\*\*she said shaking with fear then he squeezed his hand tight around her neck and she tried fighting him off but he was just too strong...she struggled breathing until she saw her whole life flashing in front of her and her eyes rolled back then he opened his mouth wide ready to feed on her then a force hit Castiel hard and he flew across the room and he hit the wall hard

and he landed on the floor and passed out immediately....Kazi then took the IV off her wrist and she got off the bed and limped to the door....she opened it and got out then she walked down the stairs slowly until she reached downstairs and she rushed to the door and after she opened the door she froze....the house was surrounded by thick trees and outside it looked like some ancient abandoned building it was like one of those house you see on horror movies....her body shook as she looked at her surrounding and she limped through those thick trees hoping that she will find a road ahead or find any help from anyone\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE\*\*\*

\*\*\*Ray was busy pacing up and down\*\*\*

Ray: so he's really here and he has the girl....fuck!

Ruslan: we need to find her man I tried to warn him but it was like I was talking to a brick....now he's gonna be ready for the beasts and I know it won't end well....imagine a vampire who is also a wizard man

Ray: this shit is getting complicated each second

Ruslan: yeah

\*\*\*he rubbed his head and he sat down\*\*\*

Ray: why did you warn him....i thought you hated him and wanted him dead

\*\*\*Ruslan didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ray: let me guess no matter how fucked up he is and no matter how much of a nuisance he is he's still your elder brother right

\*\*\*Ruslan didn't say anything he just clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ray: you don't want him dead do you?

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: can we not talk about that son of a vampire and let's talk about my plan for James' family

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: I've come through for Heath so many times that I've even lost count whenever he fucked up pretty bad while we were growing up....i have wished so many times to put a bullet on his forehead each time he messed up bad cause I was the one cleaning up his mess but I couldn't cause at the same time my love for him as my little brother and the bond

we share grew stronger every time and I wouldn't trade him for anything man so I understand and I got your back in whatever you decide to do even though is to help him

\*\*\*he sat down too\*\*\*

Ray: so what do you have planned for the Mashabas

\*\*\*Ruslan smirked a little\*\*\*

Ruslan: im gonna traumatize them for eternity and the world will never forget James Mashaba's funeral ever

Ray: what do you mean by that?

\*\*\*he smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: watch what I do to those who hurt Thandi and the boys

INSERT.....05

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*Ray just shook his head\*\*\*

Ray: whatever you plan on doing please bros remember Star Thandi and the boys will be there

\*\*\*well Amo and Mbali won't be able to make it because their babies are still young for them to be going to funerals\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't worry they won't see anything

Ray: his home?

Ruslan: no...the graveyard

\*\*\*he said smiling\*\*\*

Ray: fuck no

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: fuck yes

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Castiel woke up holding his head then he sat up straight and he chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: what are you Juana I mean you're supposed to be a ghost but here you are using special powers to throw me across the room

\*\*\*nothing then he looked over at the bed and it was empty and he chuckled shaking his heavy head then he closed his eyes and searched for her and he found her limping along the thick bushes and he sighed shaking his head....he has a physical link to her through her blood from that day he licked her blood and almost fed on her....he then connected to her mind \*\*\*

Castiel: you are deep inside the jungle and there are wild animals and they are hungry as hell especially man-eating snakes and tigers

\*\*\*Kazi stopped walking and she looked around as she heard Castiel's voice with her heart beating fast....she was in extreme pain but she didn't care cause all she wanted was to be as far as she can away from the monster she left in that house and now she was hearing his voice as if its speaking inside her head\*\*\*

Castiel: your choice lady its either you take your chances with me or you get eaten by wild animals and perish just like that....and just so you know the moment that lion or tiger gets its claws into your flesh you gonna wish you chose to take your chances with me....now you have approximately 45 minutes before those boa pythons come out to feed

\*\*\*she stood there shaking looking around then out of nowhere she felt hands on her waist and she froze\*\*\*

Castiel: so what is it gonna be Kay

\*\*\*her body visibly shook as he whispered on her right ear\*\*\*

Castiel: so?

\*\*\*then they heard some sound not far from them and she held his hand tight and it was cold as ice\*\*\*

Castiel: what is it gonna be lady

Kazi: I'll....I'll take my...my chances with you

Castiel: thought as much

\*\*\*he chuckled and he apparated from there to inside the house then he picked her up bridal style and took her to her bed and laid her down\*\*\*

Castiel: try to run away again and I'll personally feed you to the wild animals and that's if I don't kill you first you hear me

\*\*\*she nodded with tears running down her cheeks and he lifted her shirt up and took his things and he cleaned her wound since it was bleeding and after he was done he covered her and injected her with a right dose of morphine and he walked out\*\*\*

Castiel: show yourself Juana and that's if it's your real name

\*\*\*nothing\*\*\*

Castiel: its either you show yourself or I'll kill Kazi by sucking out every drop of her blood out of her body and you know I don't play around

\*\*\*still nothing\*\*\*

Castiel: fine she's the dead weight I don't need anyway

\*\*\*he turned and walked back to the stairs\*\*\*

Voice: Cass

\*\*\*he stopped and slowly turned and there she was standing in a mid-even light brown long dress but the thing is it wasn't the Juana he knows physically but the voice was that of her\*\*\*

Castiel: who the fuck are you?

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Juana: Juana

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled looking at her then he shook his head not believing all this\*\*\*

Castiel: my wife is Caucasian and you are black

Juana: i...I know i...

\*\*\*he interrupted her\*\*\*

Castiel: I ASKED YOU WHO THE FUCK YOU ARE!

\*\*\*he roared and his eyes turned black\*\*\*

Juana: Cass you need to calm down and let me explain

\*\*\*then Castiel moved like the wind charging towards her but when he got to her and tried to grab her by her neck she vanished and he quickly turned and she was standing behind him\*\*\*



Juana: im not really here so stop it

Castiel: where's my wife?

\*\*\* He said with his fangs all out\*\*\*

Juana: she doesn't exist

\*\*\*he stood there frozen with a frown on his face\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*AT BUHLE AND MENZI'S RESIDENCE\*\*\*

\*\*\*Menzi walked inside the house feeling drained they had another lead but it turned out to be a another dead end they have been facing each day passing without finding her meant that she could very well be dead or shipped off to another country and that broke his heart even more....then his phone rang and it was Snakes\*\*\*

Menzi: grootman

Snakes: Mapholoba I have something

Menzi: im listening

Snakes: I found your wife's numbers on that motherfucker who hired those guys

\*\*\*Menzi closed his eyes and he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Menzi: how many times did she call him

Snakes: 6 times and the last time they spoke on the phone was a night before the attack and she tried him a couple of times after the attack and left a few missed calls too

Menzi: how could she

\*\*\*he said with a low tone\*\*\*

Snakes: look its either she's cheating on you with the man who hired those men to kill your Kazi or she paid him to find men to do it

Menzi: im gonna kill her

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and he rushed upstairs and when he walked in he found her on the floor with her eyes and mouth opened and she wasn't blinking she was bleeding from her

mouth and nose ....he looked besides her and saw a box of rat poison and a paper under it...he sighed and went to pick the paper and she wrote something on it ....it read;

“ im sorry for hiring that guy to kill Kazi and her unborn babies. I could see it in your eyes that you in love with her and I knew that if I didn't know your deep dark secret you would've divorced me long ago. Im also sorry for sleeping with your father I fell in love with his money and what I didn't think about is when he dies you'll inherit all his money and it will also be my money since im your wife so yah im dumb like that. The love for money and material things were my downfall and if I became loyal and faithful to you im sure we would be happy by now but no I screwed it up I guess my mother was right about me despite all the shitty things I did that hurt you but I have always loved you despite what you may think.

Thank you for accepting Ntwentle as if she's yours even though she's your father's please take care of my babies and always tell them that I love them and im sorry I had to resort to this because of shame and fear. Talking about fear the guy that has Kazi and killed those guys called me and threatened to expose me by sending you a recording of one of the guys confessing that I was involved and he has her he even said the babies didn't make it im sorry. I saved his number as the kidnapper im sorry Menzi please find it in your heart to forgive me.....love Buhle”

\*\*\*he stood there with his hands shaking his eyes welled with tears and he let them fall....then he started kicking her body over and over until he got tired then he stopped and he grabbed her phone and walked out wiping off his tears\*\*\*

.  
. .

\*\*\* AT THE MASHABA RESIDENCE AT GIYANI LIMPOPO \*\*\*

\*\*\*it was the day of the funeral and Thandi and her brothers sons Naledi and Ruslan slept at a nearby BnB and now they are standing outside the yard while people and the casket are inside the tent where a ceremony was held....Ruslan has his arm around Mpendulo who keeps on wiping off his tears while Ray was holding Mpilo and Naledi was standing next to Thandi....they saw uncle Gezani walking to them he shook their hands and stood next to Jabu\*\*\*

Gezani: im sorry about all this the boys should be inside there but because some people are evil they are standing out here like it's not their father who's laying inside that coffin

Heath: it's all good uncle as long as they are there when their father is being buried

\*\*\*the uncle nodded\*\*\*

Gezani: where is your grandfather I thought he'll come

Jabu: di high high di namelletse so re mochaetse gore a blome gae le magriza (his blood pressure is high so we told him to stay back with granny ) and we will come instead and plus they are looking after Heath's kids

\*\*\*the uncle nodded\*\*\*

Jabu: ka bona gore ebile ba chunne monyanya wa lesa hierso ( I see they threw a party-funeral here)

\*\*\*they chuckled\*\*\*

Jabu: mmmmh bo stretch tent le di catering as if o tla tsoga e be a re “yeeses auntiza yeer go pila mos mo....ai motho tshwanetse a swe mo often mos mo” (mmmmh stretch tent and catering as if he'll wake up and say “jeez aunt its beautiful here....i guess a person needs to die more often”)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Uncle.Gezani: wa bona wena Jabu....number one!

\*\*\* They continued to laugh\*\*\*

Ruslan: you ok champ

\*\*\*Mpendulo nodded and he kissed the top of his head then Jackson walked to them with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Jackson: what are you doing here I thought we told you never to set your feet here

Jabu: hei wena changaan man ke strata sa papao se? ( hey Shangaan man is this your father's street?)

Jackson: o vholavhola na mena wena san? ( are you talking to me boy)

Jabu: no im talking to your shadow jou bleksem ...ofcourse ke ova le wena ntja (ofcourse im talking to you dog)

Thandi: Jabu there are kids here please

Jabu: then botsa Mr Steroids here a fotseke mo unless papae a owner this street ( then tell Mr. Steroids here to fuck off from here unless his father owns this street)

\*\*\* Jackson chuckled\*\*\*

Jackson: remember this is Giyani and not where you come from mfo

\*\*\*he said with a smirk on his face\*\*\*

Heath: are you threatening us man

\*\*\*he said getting closer to him with a scary frown on his face\*\*\*

Jackson: take a step back boy

Heath: I asked you a question you piece of shit

Ray: Ezech not here man

\*\*\*then Heath smirked looking at Jackson who was itching to beat the shit out of Heath\*\*\*

Heath: damn you just got saved again....you lucky son of a bitch....but remember luck sometimes runs out man and I'll be there waiting for you

Jackson: I can't wait for that day where I'll teach you what we do to bitches like you in the military

\*\*\*Heath smiled wide in a creepy way and Jackson frowned \*\*\*

Ruslan: not in front of the boys

\*\*\*he said through his teeth with a warning tone\*\*\*

Caesar: damn I cant wait....we should make it soon cause im sure you also can't wait

Ruslan: I said not in front of the boys are you both deaf!

\*\*\*he said with a stern voice\*\*\*

Ray: Caesar calm down

\*\*\*he said through his teeth and Caesar raised his hands up with that creepy smile on his face and he took a step back then he put his hands inside his pockets and he looked over at Naledi who had a frown on her face and Caesar winked at her with a side smile on his face and Naledi swallowed hard\*\*\*

Caesar: sorry about that Obi m

\*\*\*Ruslan just shook his head then Jackson looked at Thandi and his face softened\*\*\*

Jackson: after the funeral we need to talk you and I its about the boys

\*\*\*Ruslan frowned\*\*\*

Thandi: I have nothing to say to you

Jackson: look its at the best interest of my brother's sons we talk after the funeral ok

\*\*\*Thandi huffed and she looked away while Naledi was giving him nasty looks scanning him up and down with a disgusted look on her face\*\*\*

Ruslan: move along Mr steroids!

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone and Jackson chuckled then he looked at Thandi again\*\*\*

Jackson: I'll call you after the funeral don't leave without us talking

Ruslan: I said move along!

\*\*\*he said now with a pissed off tone and Jackson chuckled again and he walked away and Thandi and Naledi clicked their tongues \*\*\*

Ray: calm down man

\*\*\*he said to Ruslan who seemed angry\*\*\*

Uncle.Gezani: I need a DNA test done...I can't be related to these people....maybe im the neighbor's child no man vanhu la vha vhanyanyesa man nx

\*\*\* Jabu chuckled\*\*\*

Jabu: sure uncle

\*\*\*then people inside the tent stood up and some got out of the tent and Jabu told Thandi to get inside the car and she did and closed the door and as soon the coffin was carried out of the tent to the hearse Mpendulo started crying and Ruslan held him tight while inside the car Thandi kept looking up to stop the tears.....she was hurt that after all the years she suffered fighting James' side chicks and forcing him to grow up and to take care of his boys ended here with him inside a coffin she wished she never agreed to marry him cause if they never married traditionally she wouldn't be expected to sit on the mattress and his sons wouldn't have been disowned by the family....if only she listened to her grandmother's warnings but she knew that now it was too late for regrets....even though she is hurt that he's dead at the same time she despised him for what he's putting her through even in his death.....anyway the casket is now inside the hearse with people singing gospel songs and off it went slowly to the graveyard where he will be laid to rest and cars followed it\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\* AT THE GRAVEYARD\*\*\*

\*\*\*Thandi remained inside the car while her brothers the boys Ruslan and Naledi went to the burial site and stood there and watched the family cover the casket with a blanket and the pastor started the burial ceremony.....Mpendulo was busy crying with Ruslan holding him tight and the congregation started singing as the casket went down slowly and the aunt cried out loud then others followed\*\*\*

1.Oho Yesu Ndza ta Sweswi

O ndzi amukela

Ndzi tisane hi swivi swa nga

U ndzi amukela.

2. Ndzi xisiwile hi nala

Masiku hinkwawo

Kunene a ndzi lovile

Ndzi nga voni chumu.

3. O namuntlha ndza tisola.

U ndzi amukela

Ndza ta Hosi hi mihloti

U ndzi amukela.

4. Hlantswa mbilu ya nga Hosi

Ndzi hlayise Yesu.

Moya lo'wu hanyisaka

Tirha masingita.

5. Ndza ta Hosi Ndzi mudyohi

U ndzi tsetselela

Ndzi kombela wena Hosi

U ndzi amukela.

6. O Moya wa Pentekosta

Xika hi marimba

Hi ve timboni ta wena

Hi nga chavi nchumu

\*\*\*they sang and Ruslan clenched his jaws as Mpendulo and Mpilo's cries touched a sensitive part in his heart and he swallowed hard.....after the casket was now inside the grave Ruslan whispered to Naledi that she should take the boys back to the cars and she nodded and held their hands and she went back to the cars with Mpendulo sobbing painfully and Ray watched Ruslan move to the other side of the Burial site and he whispered to his brothers\*\*\*

Ray: brace yourselves

Them: huh?

Ray: don't freak out ok

\*\*\*the congregation started humming a slow sad song with the pastor reciting a "ashes to ashes and dust to dust" prayer in Xitsonga.... then Ruslan's eyes changed from its normal color to cloudy eyes and he recited a spell and dust wind started filling the burial site and people screamed women where holding their dresses wigs and skirts down as the dust-wind blew all over then all of a sudden it stopped and people started mumbling dusting themselves and when the pastor continued with the "ashes to ashes and dust to dust" prayer they heard something hitting hard inside the grave and they all stopped.....the sound got louder and louder and people started freaking out cause it was clear the sound was inside the casket\*\*\*

Jabu: what the fuck!

\*\*\*Ray looked over at Ruslan and he knew it was him even though he was wearing shades.....he was waking James from the dead well more like using James' corpse to do whatever he wants it to do\*\*\*

Woman: Jesus o koma a ha hanya a ndzeni ka bokisi (Jesus I think he's still alive inside the coffin)

\*\*\*she said with her hand on her chest\*\*\*

Woman2: ooh my God!

\*\*\*they said looking freaked out while others were moving to the back cause they were scared....then someone went to the family and told them what was going on as the sound was getting louder and Jackson Mzamane the aunt and Joe got up and went closer to the grave next to the pastor while everyone else inside the tent also got up\*\*\*

Pastor: I don't know what is happening but there's a banging sound inside the casket

Aunt: ooh my God.... o hleketa kore..... (do you think...)

\*\*\* Jackson rushed closer to the grave with other people taking videos while others where already by the pavement far away from the grave site\*\*\*

Heath: don't tell me its what I think it is

Jabu: shit...shit...no he fucken didn't!

\*\*\*he said with his heart pounding hard and his hands shaking\*\*\*

\*\*\* anyway Jackson went inside the grave \*\*\*

Jackson: JAMES? JAMES?.....IS IT YOU IN THERE?

\*\*\*\*the banging sound continued and he remembered that the casket was locked then he asked someone to hand him a rock and they quickly did....well everyone was shocked including the funeral palour guys to a point that one of them was even taking a video to show people so they'll believe him when he tell them what he saw....

Anyway Jackson broke the lock and he balanced himself with the walls inside the grave and he quickly opened the casket and James corpse was looking at him with its eyes opened and the eyeballs were also cloudy in colour just like Ruslans and Jackson swallowed hard as he felt chills run down his spine.....he slowly bend backwards since he was bending forward after he opened the coffin\*\*\*

Aunt: Jack o pfukile James?....n'wana mina o pfukile? ( Jack is James awake...is my child awake?)

\*\*\*then the corpse slowly sat up straight like a robot well the corpse was doing exactly what Ruslan was commanding it to do with his mind.... anyway Jackson told them to get him out immediately and Joe grabbed his hand and pulled him out....then the corpse stood up from the coffin and Ruslan recited another spell and it started climbing out of the grave fast without any difficulty and people screamed and they ran away with others falling and other women running in heels as if they are wearing flat shoes screaming\*\*\*

INSERT.....06

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\* James corpse stood there as Richard Joe kokwane and the aunt stood about 16 yards away from him as for Ray Jabu and Heath they were now standing next to Ruslan while other people were standing far wondering what's happening while other men who are brave enough they were standing at about 17 to 20 feet away from James with shocked and horrified looks on their faces while others were taking videos\*\*\*

Jabu: no man...no man....bo ke boloi ba ko America... I swear tse re di bona ko Tv fela( this a American witchcraft....we only see such on Tv)

\*\*\*He said with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Heath: im dreaming right big Ray?

Ray: nope

\*\*\*he said with a chilled voice\*\*\*

Jabu: no man big Ray.....so ke tsona di Para what what tsona tse ( so these are the Para what-what)

\*\*\*Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: will you two just breathe and relax and enjoy the show



Jabu: enjoy?.....ka bona o tsobile lebake wena no in fact o tsobile nyaope and a ke frostane why o tsobile o le one o sa re fa le rona nx.... ( I see you smoked weed no in fact you smoked whoonga “nyaope” and I don’t understand why you would smoke alone without us)

\*\*\*Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Heath: bros wetin be this....na juju or na my eye dey showing me things? ( bro what’s all this...is this witchcraft my eyes are seeing?)

Ray: Na juju Ezeh now calm down and relax

Kokwane: mehlolo ngwino.....nere mehlolo bano ba xikwenbu! (this is unbelievable.... I said this is unbelievable people of God)

\*\*\*she said with her hands on top of her head shouting\*\*\*

Aunt: Kwendlakala yini la.... yi mehlolo le yi njane leyi? ( what’s going on here....what kind of miracle is this?)

Richard: I can’t believe this!

\*\*\*he said with a shaky voice\*\*\*

Mzamane: xipoko ngwino...wapoka Jemese....( a ghost people....James is a ghost)

\*\*\*he said looking scared then the corpse turned its head and looked towards the Mashaba family and uncle Mzamane ran away like he was being chased by dogs and other people who were still around but far from the scene started to run too when they saw Uncle Mzamane running towards them.....then the corpse tried to open its mouth but the lips were glued together so Ruslan whispered a spell and the glue melted and it opened its mouth then kokwane fell on the ground and she fainted while the aunt stood there shaking along with Richard and Joe as for uncle Gezani he long ran away busy screaming that his family is full of witches....

Anyway the corpse then made hissing sounds like a snake and it turned its whole body and it faced the Mashabas \*\*\*

James: you....

\*\*\* it moved its arm slowly and it pointed at the Mashabas and they moved back slowly shaking with fear\*\*\*

Joe: ooh God....oooh God...

\*\*\*he said with his heart beating fast\*\*\*

James: it’s your fault

\*\*\*it spoke with a hissing tone then it made those hissing sounds again\*\*\*

James: my sons....

\*\*\*then it made cracking sounds when its head bend to the side a bit \*\*\*

James: why?

Jackson: James look we....

\*\*\*he said with a shaky voice\*\*\*

James: talk again and we will be buried together today brother

\*\*\* Jackson kept quiet looking scared\*\*\*

James: take back what you said about my sons and their mother or you will never know peace!

Aunt: i...we...

\*\*\*then Ruslan chanted a spell and the Mashabas felt stuck where they are....they couldn't move an inch and James' corpse walked closer to them doing a zombie walk and Joe fainted\*\*\*

Jackson: ooh god....ooh God we are dead!

\*\*\*he said shaking with fear as for the aunt she was visibly shaking too\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION\*\*\*\*

Castiel: what do you mean my wife doesn't exist?

Juana: im the real Juana I was send to look after you until you find her

\*\*\*his face and fangs went back to normal\*\*\*

Castiel: what?

Juana: my job was to make sure you don't go astray and that you leave America in one piece

\*\*\*he paced up and down while shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: no no no....you're lying....you're lying!

\*\*\*he said shouting\*\*\*

Juana: im sorry but if your mother didn't make me your guardian you and your brother would be dead

Castiel: guardian? guardian?...we fucken had sex you vile bitch.... I kissed you ooh fuck I kissed a dead body posing as a living human.....

\*\*\* Juana looked away and she kept quiet\*\*\*

Castiel: and stop lying to me my mother wouldn't do that to me.....she wouldn't!

Juana: look she couldn't lose two sons Castiel.....you and Ruslan would have died at the hands of the brethren

Castiel: stop it ok...fucken stop it!

\*\*\*he grabbed a vas and threw it at her but it went through her and hit the wall breaking into pieces\*\*\*

Juana: IF SHE DIDN'T PLANT ME IN YOUR LIFE YOU WOULD HAVE JOINED THE BRETHREN AFTER HER DEATH CAUSE SHE KNEW HER DEATH WOULD HIT YOU HARD AND YOU WOULD GIVE UP ON LIFE AND THE BRETHREN WOULD HAVE RECRUITED YOU AND YOUR BROTHER WOULD HAVE TRIED TO SAVE YOU FROM THEM CAUSE WE ALL KNOW THEY ARE DANGEROUS AND THEY WOULD HAVE KILLED THE BOTH OF YOU

Castiel: MADOU IS STRONG AND A GREAT WIZARD.... I MEAN HE KILLED THEIR LEADER LIKE HE WAS SOME COCKROACH

Juana: they would have kidnapped his son and it would have been his life for his son's life and you know he wouldn't hesitate to give up his life own for his son's

Castiel: no...no

Juana: then you would have went after the brethren and you wouldn't have made it going after them alone....your mother saw your future and if she didn't do what she did she would have lost two sons

\*\*\*Castiel sat down with his chest visibly moving up and down fast \*\*\*

Juana: im sorry but it had to be done I was supposed to make you betray your brother to have your mind occupied and for you not to dwell too much on your mother's death and to continue to lead you to the one that will give you your heart's desire

Castiel: so all of this was a lie....it was all a lie....MY FUCKEN BROTHER HATES ME BECAUSE OF YOU AND MY MOTHER!

Juana: it had to be done or you wouldn't be here!

Castiel: all of this was a lie!

Juana: a lie that saved both you and your brother

\*\*\*then Castiel started laughing the laugh started off low then it got louder and louder then all of a sudden he stopped laughing\*\*\*

Juana: treat Kazi right and know that once she's pregnant and she dies then your baby will die too....and you need your brother Ruslan's help to keep her and the baby alive....she's a special one and everyone that gets close to her feel fulfilled and complete you used to lie by pretending you weren't smitten by her but the actual truth is you were and still are

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: that bitch means nothing to me and to prove that I can go and feed on her until she takes her last breath so don't psycho analyze me you fucken bitch

Juana: well if you do that then know that there is no woman in the world that will be able to carry your seed and have a 50 percent chance of making it alive I mean even that dead woman's body couldn't carry it for long

\*\*\*he chuckled bitterly shaking his head\*\*\*

Juana: you need her Cass and you are not the only one who does....that hitman also need her and he loves her unlike you and he will leave no stone unturned until he finds her and your brother is right he has beasts behinds him searching for her and if you decide to take them on then some might die and you might live but you will have to forget about having a child ever

\*\*\*he didn't say anything\*\*\*

Juana: let her go and court her the right way and have her accept to carry your seed willingly and not have your child hate you when he/she finds out about what you did to mommy.... and fix things between you and your brother cause the brethren are coming after you and him and so is the witches' council they found your location

\*\*\*he looked up at her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Castiel: what?

Juana: I guess your mother's plan had a flaw after all cause now real danger is coming

\*\*\*Then she disappeared\*\*\*

Juana: you don't have to keep her captive....do things the right way cause she's the only woman in this lifetime who can give you your heart's desire and for your information you are not a monster Castiel circumstances made you one but you can choose not to be one....remember she's every men's chosen one who threat her good and so treat her right so she becomes yours.....Good bye Castiel

\*\*\*her voice spoke then silence.....then out of the blue Castiel got up and his fangs got long and his skin changed along with his eyes and he screamed out loud with rage and he started breaking things throwing them to the wall while others he broke them into half.....by the time he was done the whole house except for the room Kazi was in was in

shambles.....then he ran out of the house into the woods in his vampire state baying for blood\*\*\*

.  
. .  
.

\*\*\*\*AT THE GRAVEYARD.....LIMPOPO\*\*\*\*

\*\*\* James corpse stood next to the remaining Mashaba members...it was dripping a clear liquid the ice was melting....then it hissed\*\*\*

James: my sons are off limit or I'll haunt you until you decide to commit suicide.... I may have been a useless father when I was alive but I'll make anyone who hurts my sons in any way wish death upon themselves

\*\*\*then it looked at his aunt who was too frightened to even utter a single word\*\*\*

James: don't dare me aunty..... apologize to Thandi and my sons or I'll make you

\*\*\*then it hissed again and its neck cracked as it put its head in a straight up position and it looked at Jackson who looked spooked\*\*\*

James: I know what you and aunty here did brother....confess or I'll haunt you until you do

\*\*\* Jackson's eyes and aunties popped out as they visibly shook then it cracked its neck again looking down on Joe and his grandmother\*\*\*

James: ʒʌ.ɾɔ ɹʌ ( wake up)

\*\*\*he commanded them and they both at the same time opened their eyes and when they looked up wondering what's going on.....their eyes landed on James corpse and they screamed while Joe peed on himself shaking\*\*\*

Kokwane: Jemese xetokolo xa mena....ko...ko endlakala yini.....opfuxi yi mani? (James my grandson....what's...what's going on.....who woke you up)

\*\*\*the corpse didn't say anything since Ruslan couldn't understand what she was saying\*\*\*

Joe: ooh God....ooh God...

\*\*\*he said trying to move from his position but it felt like he was glued on it....he couldn't even move a muscle....they all couldn't move a muscle\*\*\*

James: I know what you did

\*\*\*it said looking from Jackson to his aunt then it made laughing sounds but its face didn't show that it was laughing and it stopped and turned and walked back to the grave and it got in without any hassle and it went inside the coffin and laid down nicely and the coffin closed its self as the corpse closed its eyes and strong dusty wind filled the grave site then it stopped all of a sudden then silence\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok im done we can go now

\*\*\*Jabu jumped a bit startled and both him and Heath looked at him taking off his shades with shocked faces\*\*\*

Jabu: what are you man?

\*\*\*he asked Ruslan with a horrified look on his face\*\*\*

Ray: show off!

\*\*\*he chuckled and Ruslan laughed a bit and Ray started walking away\*\*\*

Jabu: and wena o grand ka die hele ding? ( and you are ok with the whole thing)

\*\*\*he said to Ray who just laughed walking back to the cars\*\*\*

Ruslan: ታላቅ (thaw)

\*\*\*it said with its hand waving from left to the right side then the Mashaba got control of their bodies and Joe got up and he ran like he was being chased by dogs too....and Ruslan walked back to the car whistling lightly with Jabu and Heath walking behind him tongue tide\*\*\*

Heath: Mjava a ke lore right ( Jabu im not dreaming right).... what happened really happened?

Jabu: if wa lora Mshikaro then re lora toro e one....ke fetsa go bona mafa vuka James a bolela diphefo tsa boloi and broer ya rena o bona die hele ding e le normal ebile wa laga are "show off" to moloi wa Phd ( if you are dreaming then we are dreaming the same dream....i just saw a dead James talking... winds of witchcraft and our brother sees the whole thing as normal and he's even laughing busy saying "show off" to a wizard who holds a Phd)

\*\*\*he then looked at Heath\*\*\*

Jabu: die man o busy o bakisana le Modimo Mshikaro....bo pastor Lukau batle ba tlo trainer mo mfowethu...gape mo diabowa mo....die man o fetsa go embarrass(a) di kono kono tsa mo Giyani ke ra ditweebenare tse di kgolo ...tsona di brigadier tsa mo Giyani e bile di idibetse ( this man is busy competing with God Mshikaro....pastor Lukau and his peers should come train here my brother....its lit here....this guy just embarrassed big shots of Giyani big witches.... I mean brigadiers of Giyani and they even fainted)

Heath: I just can't believe that happened man

Ruslan: believe it Ezeh I don't play around when it comes to those I hold dear to my heart

Jabu: what did mafa vuka say to them Ruru?

Ruslan: he warned them....well let me say I warned them that the boys are off limits and if they continue well he'll haunt them until they beg death to visit them....in different words but the meaning is the same

Heath: damn!

\*\*\*then they saw two police vans driving inside the cemetery and Jabu laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: ba tlo etsang dimogoes tse? (What are they here to do these fools?)

Heath: probably to arrest mafa vuka

\*\*\*they laughed and Ruslan just shook his head and got inside the car where Thandi Naledi and the boys were and Jabu and Heath went to the car Ray was in and they drove out\*\*\*

Naledi: Ruu what happened out there I saw people running and others screaming

Ruslan: well go to Facebook and Twitter and you'll find out what happened

Naledi: huh?

Ruslan: I can't say it now but people took videos im sure they'll post it on social media

Naledi: ooh ok

\*\*\*then he looked at Thandi through the rearview mirror and she was leaning her head on Naledi's shoulder with her eyes closed and he sighed and continued to drive away....Meanwhile inside the other car Ray was talking on the phone with Mbali\*\*\*

Ray: ok I love you too my flower....I'll see you later ok

\*\*\*then he ended the call\*\*\*

Heath: "I love you too"

\*\*\*he mimicked his voice\*\*\*

Heath: damn I never thought I'd hear big Ray say that to any woman

Ray: fuck you man

\*\*\*they all laughed\*\*\*

Ray: I love that girl man....i swear I can't live without her

Heath: mmmmh I know...I also can't live without Naledi

Jabu: entlek le brekela mang....le nna I can't live without Amo waka ( who are you bragging to....i also can't live without my Amo)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: no man big Ray so vele vele Ruslan o kgona go tsosa mense ba ba bhodileng? (so Ruslan can wake dead people up?)

Ray: no he doesn't sometimes he gives them a second chance in life before they go to the light if you know what I mean and this time let's say he commanded James' corpse to do what he wanted it to do

Heath: I still can't believe he did that

Ray: Ezeh we should be glad that he's one of us and that hes on our side and most of all that he loves our sister Thandi....believe me when I say you don't wanna mess with him take him on or mess with those he holds dear...he's a very dangerous man and he has a dark-witches' blood running through his veins so him being a "good wizard" doesn't mean he doesn't have a bad side believe me he does and its not a pleasant one to see

\*\*\* Jabu and Heath just kept quiet\*\*\*

Ray: that man made me get my soul back from the devil himself at one go when I had lost all hope....he killed a brethren and when he was done with him it was like he was ripped apart by a mystical beast

Jabu: eeh!

Heath: who are the brethren?

Ray: some bad motherfuckers...they are a dangerous group of vampires that only feed on human blood they killed his father right after his brother betrayed him net for control

Jabu: broer wa gae betrayed him? ( his brother betrayed him?)

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: he had no choice it was either Ruslan or his fiancé...he knew Ruslan can take care of himself but Juana is or was human

Heath: damn so how did he betray him...what did he do?

Ray: he told the Brethren the spell they needed to enter the witches' sacred grounds to apprehend a special stone named the Hag stone...there are other Hag stones out there many of them but that one is special man and it has immense super special powers

Jabu: mxm hai suka....letlapa ke letlapa man ( a stone is just a stone man)

\*\*\*Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: well the Hag stone can ward off the dead curses witches sickness and nightmares but the Brethren wanted to use it to defeat by killing all the witches it was gonna stop witches and wizards from using their powers then they kill them all.... so that's how they wanted to wipe out all the witches to rein supreme...it will only be them and werewolves and I believe after they have dealt with all the witches they were gonna go after the werewolves by finding their weaknesses and use them against them



Heath: ok ok so you want to tell me that there are vampires and werewolves too

\*\*\*he asked shocked\*\*\*

Ray: yeah man

\*\*\*Heath just shook his head astonished by all this\*\*\*

Heath: man those things are fantasies man they are not supposed to be real

Jabu: tell him Mshikaro

Ray: I have the grim reaper inside of me and you met him even though he wasn't in his full form....Ruslan is a real wizard and Mbalis's family members have beasts in them

Jabu&Heath: WHAT?

\*\*\*Ray nodded\*\*

Ray: yeah and Kalu has a demon named Saint and a beast inside of him too

\*\*\*Jabu and Heath just kept quiet processing all that shocked astonished and not believing what they were hearing\*\*\*

Heath: what?

\*\*\*he asked with a low tone\*\*\*

Ray: yeah... well with Saint it's the repercussions of making a deal with the devil and the Beast well that is a Khumalo thing...they say it was made to protect them....so yeah

\*\*\*they kept quiet\*\*\*

Jabu: mo motho le ge akare wa zama legodimo lona a ka se lebone shem....ke nale broer le setlogolo sa ledimone ( I don't think a person will ever see heaven shame....i have a demon brother and a nephew)

Ray: I have the La Parca while you Ezech have a multiple personality disorder Ruslan is a wizard and my son has a beast and a demon in him Mj is the only way God punishes us for our sins whenever he's around and with you Jabu well your rotten mouth more especially whenever you are swearing at another person hits me inside as if you are directing those swear words towards me....and whenever you say le marete I feel it man so yah we won't see heaven unless we repent man and me and my son repenting means death

\*\*\*he said with a pained tone\*\*\*

Jabu: ok I really need to go to church so that ge ke fitlha ko legodimong modimo a mpulele masango ka smile ( so that when I arrive at Heaven God will open the gates with a smile)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Heath: e be satan a tle a tswere coto ya black label le patji mixed with nyaope a jele di brentwood classic florsheim shoes leopard print shirt le berethe e be a re "ye wena le

marete a reye di broer tsa gao di ka da wena o nyakang ka mo jou fokon moeskond” ( and satan will come holding a cot of black label and weed mixed with whoonga wearing a brentwood trouser classic florsheim shoes a leopard print shirt and a beret cap and he will say “ lets go dickhead your brothers are that side so what are you doing here you fucken asshole”)

\*\*\*they busted out loud with laughter\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. . .

\*\*\*\*AT THE BNB\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Ruslan opened the door for Thandi and she walked in and when she turned he was closer to her and he pulled her closer and they kissed a slow passionate kiss that made Thandi to have goosebumps all over her body after a while they broke the kiss and he kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Ruslan: you ok?

\*\*\*he asked her and she nodded\*\*\*

Ruslan: where are the boys?

Thandi: they went to the mall with Jabu and Ray

Ruslan: and im sure Heath and Star are busy fucking like rabbits by now

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you

\*\*\*she blushed looking down and he put his finger under her chin and slowly pushed her face up and he looked at her with an intense look\*\*\*

Ruslan: marry me Thandi

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruslan: we wont get married now I just want to know your answer

\*\*\*she sighed and nodded\*\*\*

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: huh?

Thandi: yes I'll marry you Ruu

\*\*\*he smiled wide and he kissed her and hugged her tight and after some time they broke the hug and went to lay down on the bed and he put his hand on her stomach and he rubbed it slowly as he held her from the back\*\*\*

Thandi: what happened at the cemetery?

Ruslan: they say James woke up from the dead to warn his family to lay off his sons

Thandi: what?

Ruslan: mmmmh

Thandi: you said 'they say' khante didn't you see everything that happened

Ruslan: would you stand closer to the scene of a dead man waking up if you were me or your brothers?

Thandi: no... of course not

\*\*\*he kissed her neck and continued to rub her belly\*\*\*

Ruslan: we stood from afar trying to see what the heck was going on but there was dust winds and people were running and screaming it was just chaos

Thandi: mmmmh I wonder what happened

\*\*\*he kissed her neck again\*\*\*

Thandi: Ruu?

Ruslan: amour

Thandi: why do you like rubbing my belly?

\*\*\*he kissed her neck again and pulled her closer and he continued to rub her belly\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't worry you'll know why soon

\*\*\*then his phone rang and he let her go and took it from on top of the side drawer and he answered it sitting up\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah

Voice: Madou

\*\*\* the voice said with a low tone and he got out of the bed with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: Cass

Castiel: yeah.... i need your help man

Ruslan: what?

Castiel: Juana....i just found out that she never existed man... it all a façade....mom and that girl who used some dead woman's body to fool me planned the whole shit

Ruslan: ok wait... what?

Castiel: and the brethren know about my whereabouts and it's only a matter of time before the witches' council finds me too...there's a lot this Juana bitch told me that you also need to know

Ruslan: Cass look i...

\*\*\*he interrupted him\*\*\*

Castiel: the brethren are coming after you too man for killing their own you have a family now so ....just bring your son closer so you can protect him along with your new family

\*\*\* Ruslan walked out and closed the door behind him\*\*\*

Ruslan: how did they find you...I mean I couldn't even find you

Castiel: those men that I killed...the car door ripped off from the car and their hearts ripped out so yah I messed up cause even today the police can't explain what happened to them or to the car door

Ruslan: and how do they know about my location

Castiel: they gonna use me to fish you out

\*\*\*he paced around while brushing his head roughly\*\*\*

Castiel: im sorry I messed up man im really sorry

Ruslan: THAT'S ALL YOU KNOW CASTIEL...MESSING UP AND I ALWAYS HAVE TO CLEAN UP AFTER YOU AS IF YOU'RE NOT MY ELDER BROTHER

Castiel: look its fine I'll hand myself over to the witches' council....they'll kill me and the brethren won't have find you...its better I die with the witches council's hand than with the brethren's

Ruslan: no no no

\*\*\*he stopped moving\*\*\*

Castiel: it's the only way man....if the brethren catch me that bitch Ariel will make me talk forcefully with her powers

Ruslan: NO!....we'll find a way just tell me where you are and....

Castiel: I'll send you my location...and Madou I killed a human by feed off him ....right now im thirsty and Kazi....she's in danger man im gonna kill her I know I will

Ruslan: shit...ok look go outside and keep yourself busy im coming

\*\*\* Castiel dropped the call and Ruslan's phone beeped it was Castiel who send him his location\*\*\*

Ruslan: shit!

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

INSERT.....07

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION \*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Castiel decided to go to the basement cause he could smell Kazi's blood from outside the door of the room she was in from her stained shirt that's how thirsty he was..... he knew he shouldn't have fed on a human but with the way he was angry he couldn't control himself...he only regretted what he did minutes after he did it...Anyway he got inside the basement and he locked it and pointed his palm towards the door and he put a protection spell that locked him inside the basement it's a protection spell that he can't undo himself only Ruslan can undo it or another witch that owns a book of shadows...it's the only way Kazi can be safe from him at this moment\*\*\*

Castiel: mother what have you done....

\*\*\*he said to himself and he sat down on the floor and he groaned as the thirst got really bad...then he got up quickly and he started punching the wall over and over and over again\*\*\*

.  
. .  
.  
  
AT THE BNB

Ray: bros

Ruslan: I just got a call from Cass and he's in deep shit man

Ray: what deep shit

Ruslan: he said something about the Brethren finding him and Juana never existed and that he fed off a human

Ray: ooh shit!

Ruslan: he send me his location and he said he's scared he might kill that girl

Ray: then we must leave right away man

Ruslan: I was thinking I should leave now and I'll send you his location and you'll come once the ladies and boys are safely home

Ray: ok but don't leave without seeing the boys....Mpilo is busy asking if you'll join us I can tell he misses you already

\*\*\*Ruslan smiled \*\*\*

Ruslan: he is?

\*\*\*Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: yeah bros you can tell he's even bored

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: he just loves it when I do a little magic for him

\*\*\* Ray laughed\*\*\*

Ray: ok we are already on our way

Ruslan: ok

\*\*\*they ended the call and he sighed then he dialed Castiel's numbers and he answered on the third ring\*\*\*

Castiel: tell me you are close by?

\*\*\*he said with a different scary voice and Ruslan swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruslan: is she still alive?

Castiel: I locked myself in the basement using the protection spell from the book of shadows it's the only way I can keep her safe

Ray: ok stay put im on my way

\*\*\*Castiel groaned and they ended the call and Ruslan went inside\*\*\*

Thandi: is everything ok?

\*\*\*he cleared his throat going closer to her\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah ummm its my brother

Thandi: your brother? you have a brother? I mean I didn't know you have a brother

\*\*\*she said surprised and Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah I do

Thandi: you never mentioned him before

\*\*\*He sat down next to her\*\*\*

Ruslan: well we....don't see eye to eye

Thandi: ooh

Ruslan: but he's my brother and he needs my help

Thandi: umm ok

\*\*\*he leaned closer and perked her lips then he stared into her eyes\*\*\*

Ruslan: he needs my help as in now

Thandi: wait you have to leave now?

\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah

Thandi: ooh

Ruslan: he needs my help amour

Thandi: I understand

\*\*\*she said looking down\*\*\*

Ruslan: hey look at me

\*\*\*she looked at him\*\*\*

Ruslan: three days tops....i just need to make sure he's fine

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: I love you ok

\*\*\*she nodded and he kissed the tip of her nose and he got up and she sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: im gonna leave as soon as the boys come back and you'll go back with Ray and everyone else

Thandi: ok

\*\*\*he went to pack their things and they heard a knock on the door and Ruslan went to open and Mpilo threw himself on him and Ruslan caught him and picked him up laughing\*\*\*

Ruslan: someone missed me



\*\*\*Mpilo nodded and Ruslan laughed again and he brushed Mpendulo's head\*\*\*

Ruslan: you didn't miss me champ

Mpendulo: uncle please im too old for that

Ruslan: ooh so you didn't miss me

Mpendulo: I did now can we stop

\*\*\*he said looking away shyly which made Ray and Ruslan to laugh\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok champ

\*\*\*Ray looked at Thandi who didn't look happy and he looked at Ruslan and Ruu sighed then he put Mpilo down\*\*\*

Ruslan: ummm boys I have to go somewhere meaning I won't be able to go back with you and your mother but I'll come see you in three days' time ok

Mpilo: I wanna go with you

Ruslan: I know my pilot but not this time maybe next time ok

\*\*\*he sulked\*\*\*

Ruslan: look when I come back how about we go watch a movie just me you and your brother

\*\*\*he smiled and nodded\*\*\*

Mpilo: and I'll choose the movie right

Mpendulo: ooh Lord save us

\*\*\*he said rolling his eyes and they laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: hei wena Mpendulo be nice to your brother hau

Mpendulo: mara mama he always picks boring cartoon movies

Mpilo: no I don't

Mpendulo: yes you do

Mpilo: no I don't

Ray: ok ok stop you two...now say goodbye to your new daddy and lets go eat

\*\*\*Thandi gave him a "wtf" look and he chuckled\*\*\*

Mpilo: our new daddy?...is uncle Ruu our new daddy mommy

\*\*\*Thandi looked at Mpilo and swallowed hard then she looked at Ray who was looking at her with a raised eyebrow\*\*\*

Ray: yah mommy is uncle Ruu their new daddy

\*\*\*he said with a smirk on his face and Thandi gave him a death stare\*\*\*

Thandi: umm boys well the thing is....

Ruslan: do you want me to be your new daddy my pilot

\*\*\*he saved Thandi by asking Mpilo that and Mpilo looked from Thandi to Ruslan and he frowned\*\*\*

Mpilo: but if I want you to be my new daddy you won't be my uncle anymore mos

Mpendulo: duh

\*\*\*he said rolling his eyes\*\*\*

Ruslan: yes but it wont change anything between us in fact it will mean some day we will live together you me Mpe and mommy in a big house with a swimming pool

Mpilo: and you'll drive me to school just like Kevin's daddy drives Kevin to school everyday

Ruslan: ummm yeah

Mpilo: ok I want you to be my new daddy

\*\*\*he said smiling and Ray laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: you do?

\*\*\*\*he nodded smiling and she looked at Mpendulo\*\*\*\*

Mpendulo: what ma

Ray: what about you?

Mpendulo: I know mom and uncle Ruu are dating....im no longer a little boy uncle Ray

Thandi: what?

\*\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled shaking his head while Thandi was shocked\*\*\*\*

Mpendulo: I once saw you and uncle Ruu kissing duh...

\*\*\*he said with a bored tone and Thandi's heart began beating fast cause she wasn't ready to tell them yet well especially not like this \*\*\*

Ray: and you cool with that?

Mpendulo: no.... yuck

\*\*\*he said making a face\*\*\*

Mpendulo: it's not nice seeing old people kissing uncle...not nice at all anyway im hungry

\*\*\*then he looked at a shocked Ruslan\*\*\*

Mpendulo: I'll see you when you get back uncle

Ruslan: ummm yeah

\*\*\* Then he walked out and Ray chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ray: mr pilot say bye too

\*\*\*he hugged Ruslan and Ruu put him down and he ran after Mpendulo\*\*\*

Ruslan: I.... didn't see that coming

Ray: me neither man...these kids grow up fast....anyway I'll see you later man

\*\*\*they fist bumped and he walked out and Ruslan closed the door and turned to Thandi\*\*\*

Ruslan: you ok?

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: he saw us kissing Ruu

\*\*\*he went closer to her and he pulled her closer and kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Ruslan: and he seems ok with us

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: isn't it too soon for them to know I mean they just buried their father

Ruslan: they are both ok with us "dating" so we should be glad amour....imagine if they had a problem

Thandi: I guess

Ruslan: and I sense that you are unhappy

Thandi: I just don't want to teach them that it's ok to move from one relationship to another

Ruslan: and you right it's not and for your information you didn't move from one relationship to another remember I waited for you....i kept sending you love massages and calling you

\*\*\*she looked down blushing and he chuckled then he stopped and sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: you don't seem pleased that im leaving amour

Thandi: I think im becoming clingy Ruu...right now I feel like crying cause you leaving even though I understand that you have to help your brother

\*\*\*he smiled and pushed her face up and kissed her\*\*\*

Ruslan: now you know how I feel every time I have to leave you every night just so the boys don't find me in the morning

\*\*\*she smiled looking at him\*\*\*

Thandi: really?

\*\*\*he nodded and he perked her lips\*\*\*

Ruslan: im also clingy but im a man so sulking about it will make me look like a pussy

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: but I have to go now amour....I'll call you every chance I get ok

\*\*\*she nodded and they hugged for some time then they pulled apart and kissed passionately until they broke it to catch their breaths\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*ON THE ROAD\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*Ray Heath Jabu Naledi Thandi and the boys were on their way home ....Ray Thandi Naledi and the boys where on one car and Jabu and Heath were on another car they rented since Ruslan used the other car when he left ...anyway Jabu's phone rang and it was Amo\*\*\*

Jabu: rato laka (my love)

Amo: Jabu your baby mama is here and she's busy causing a scene

\*\*\*she said with a pissed off tone\*\*\*

Jabu: o reng? (what)

Amo: yeah....i don't have the strength to deal with her Jabu ok...o busy o tlhaba mashata mo ( she's busy shouting) calling me names a re im keeping her son away from her

Jabu: rato laka ke gona re tswang ka Limpopo so im gonna send some guys batlo ntsha tonki eo don't worry wena don't open the door her ( my love we just drove out of Limpopo so

im gonna send some guys to come and take out that donkey don't worry....just don't open the door for her)

Amo: ok

Jabu: kao rata wautlwa (I love you you hear me)

Amo: I love you too

\*\*\*then they ended the call\*\*\*

Jabu: nx sfebe se sentlwaela masepa ( that bitch is pissing me off)

Heath: what's wrong?

Jabu: Amo a re Dipuo o ko dladleng obusy o tlhaba mashata ( Amo said Dipuo is at my house busy causing a scene)

Heath: wait Dipuo as in your crazy baby mama

Jabu: yah I swear tonki e le e tlo nnyela not with my wife Mshikaro...ke tlo tlhaba sefebe kuku ka thipa nna nx ( yeah I swear im gonna deal with that donkey not with my wife Mshikaro....im gonna end up stabbing a bitch's pussy with a knife nx)

\*\*\*he said dialing one of his boys' numbers\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*AT JABU AND AMO'S HOUSE \*\*\*

Dipuo: ye wena sfebe ke re ( hey bitch) where is my son!

\*\*\*she said banging on the door....Amo only let her inside the yard cause she said she's Sbu's mother but when she started insulting her she left her outside and she locked herself her daughter and Sbu inside the house and called Jabu....she knew Jabu doesn't like cops and he doesn't want them inside his yard so calling the cops on her was out of question\*\*\*

Sbu: mama im sorry about this

\*\*\*he said looking down ashamed and Amo went closer to him\*\*\*

Amo: hey

\*\*\*she said cupping his face\*\*\*

Amo: don't apologize for other people's crazy behavior ok....she may be your biological mother but you are also my son ... so stop apologizing

\*\*\*Sbu nodded with tears in his eyes and she hugged him\*\*\*

Dipuo: Sbu!

\*\*\*she called out to him\*\*\*

Dipuo: Sbu baby its your mother!

\*\*\*Sbu broke the hug and he went to the door looking angry with Amo calling after him...he opened the door and he looked at his mother with a deadly look on his face\*\*\*

Dipuo: ooh my boy look at you....baby go inside and pack your clothes we are going home

Amo: home as in where exactly?

Dipuo: wena stay out of this nx

\*\*\*she said pointing at Amo\*\*\*

Sbu: dont talk to my mother like that Dipuo!

\*\*\*he said with an angry tone \*\*\*

Dipuo: your mother?....hey wena Sbusiso I gave birth to you wankutlwa 19 hours of labour so oska mpotsa nyoso ( so don't tell me nonsense)....im your mother and not her

Amo: Dipuo or whatever your name is bona mo giving birth doesn't make you a mother wankutlwa....where were you all this years you knew Jabu was in prison but you never bothered to help Jabu's mother with Sbu and now you come here to my house o tlo tlhaba mashata busy saying my son my son...which son are you talking about!

\*\*\*she said shouting at her and Dipuo took a step closer to Amo and Sbu quickly stood between them\*\*\*

Sbu: touch her and you'll see

Dipuo: Sbusiso so you are defending this thing against me your mother?

Sbu: I said touch her and you'll see

\*\*\*Dipuo laughed clapping her hands once \*\*\*

Dipuo: so you have poisoned my son against me you witch

\*\*\*Sbu grabbed her by her shirt tight and he pulled her closer to his face and Dipuo swallowed hard with her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Amo: ooh my God Sbu baby don't please don't

\*\*\*she said shocked with what he just did\*\*\*

Sbu: listen here Dipuo....mom here is dad's wife dad being Jabu and he will deal accordingly with anyone who insults or threatens her and im Jabu's son and have his crazy blood running through my veins so call her a witch once again and I'll forget that you once gave birth to me and I'll....

Amo: Sbu don't please baby don't...she's not worth it

\*\*\*she interrupted him\*\*\*

Sbu: I don't want to go with you anywhere and I don't want to live with you.....I'll never forgive you for what you did and said to me that day I came to ask for money to buy school shoes...if it wasn't for uncle Heath I would have....

\*\*\*\*then he stopped cause he was getting more angry and emotional at the same time\*\*\*

Sbu: you are no mother to me Dipuo now get out of my father's yard and never set your feet here again

\*\*\*he let her go and took a step back\*\*\*

Dipuo: Sbusiso....



\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*

Sbu: GET OUT DIPUO!

\*\*\*he roared which made Amo and Dipuo to jump a bit ...then a car parked outside the yard and two scary looking guys got out of the car then one of the guys put his phone on his ear and seconds later he put his phone in his pocket then Amo's phone rang \*\*\*

Amo: babe

Jabu: open the gate for those two guys and go inside with Sbu

Amo: Jabu what's...

\*\*\*he interrupted her\*\*\*

Jabu: Amogelang now!.....please

\*\*\*she sighed and she went inside the house and opened the gate for them and she instructed for Sbu to get inside and she closed the door while Sbu went to the baby's crib and lifted Lile (Jabulile) up and he kissed her forehead and he took her bottle and went to sit down while feeding her....Amo smiled looking at them cause Sbu was protective of his little sister and it was cute then she heard a car driving away and she sighed she prayed that they don't hurt her cause despite being an awful mother to Sbu and a mean human being Dipuo was still Sbu's biological mother nonetheless\*\*\*

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

INSERT.....08

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*INSIDE THE WOODS\*\*\*

\*\*\* Ruslan parked his car where the woods started it was a cloudy day. He then crouched down and put his palm on the ground and he closed his eyes listening then he heard a banging sound on the ground and he opened his eyes and got up then he walked inside the woods for some time he would crouch to the ground every now and then to get the right direction to where the house is cause the gps coordinates shows he's somewhere inside the woods....he walked for some time until he got to some thick tall trees and grass and he could see that a spell is what is making them that thick and scary looking then he pointed his palm to them and his eyes changed color to gold and black and he chanted a spell and the thick trees and grass made a way for him to pass and he walked to the other side and he found the "scary like in a horror movie" abandoned house and he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: copy cat

\*\*\*then he went closer to the house and he stopped walking when he felt a figure watching him not far from him then he turned and his eyes changed to cloudy color and the weather changed....clouds gathered and lightings started hitting all around but what the person didn't know was they were searching for him until one hit him and he fell from one of the tall trees and he groaned then Ruslan used his magic to lift the person up and brought him to where he is....he used his magic to hold him up right using an invisible magical rope to hold him tight as he floated on air\*\*\*

Ruslan: who are you and what do you want?

\*\*\*he asked with a thick and scary voice\*\*\*

Man: fuck... that hurt!

\*\*\*then he laughed a bit and Ruslan tightened the invisible magical rope that was holding him and he groaned\*\*\*

Ruslan: answer me!

Man: I can't believe you are also here man...damn

\*\*\*Ruslan tightened some more the invisible rope around him and the man's skin started cracking\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh a full blown vampire how interesting

Man: ok ok im ready to talk....ummm look Castiel and I are buddies and im here to warn him about the Brethren they found his location man

Ruslan: and who are you?

Man: Eden

\*\*\*then Ruslan chanted a spell that froze him and he let him fall on the ground hard and he picked up a stick and drew a circle around him and four signs of the witches' symbol and he chanted a trap spell that will keep him inside the circle then he faced the house and he lifted off the illusion spell that covered it and a beautiful house emerged and he went inside.... the banging sound wasn't heard anymore and he remembered that Castiel said he locked himself in the basement and he searched for it and found it then he went down the stairs and he saw a magic spell covering the door then he lifted it off and he opened the door and found the room in shambles.... the walls had cracks and holes on them and everything was broken to pieces and Castiel was on the floor with his face buried between his thighs\*\*\*

Ruslan: damn

Castiel: is not as bad as it looks

\*\*\*he said with a scary voice and still with his face buried between his thighs\*\*\*

Ruslan: ummm yeah it does

\*\*\*then Castiel raised his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: shit I don't remember the last time I saw you like this man

Castiel: I didn't think you'd come

Ruslan: mmmh I didn't think you'd call me for help too

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: where's your other half

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's coming

Castiel: thought as much

Ruslan: before I forget your vampire buddy Eden is outside looking for you

\*\*\*Castiel frowned and he got up\*\*\*

Castiel: I don't have a friend named Eden in fact I don't have friends...wait the only Eden I know is a Brethren

Ruslan: I knew I didn't trust him

Castiel: shit they found me

\*\*\*he said pacing up and down\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah looks like it now pull yourself together and let's get out of here

\*\*\*he said walking out and he went upstairs with Castiel behind him...he got to Kazi's room while Cass went to his room to change his clothes and she was awake but still drowsy\*\*\*

Kazi: who...who are you?

\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: its ok go back to sleep

\*\*\*then he put his open hand on her forehead and chanted a spell then she passed out and he carried her in his arms then Castiel got in\*\*\*

Ruslan: take important things and lets get out of here

\*\*\*he nodded and went out\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*they were outside and Castiel was standing next to Eden on the other side of the circle \*\*\*

Castiel: unfreeze him Madou

\*\*\*Ruslan did and Eden got up slowly breathing heavily\*\*\*

Eden: I knew it was you

Castiel: yeah so?

\*\*\*Eden chuckled and he tried to get out of the circle but a force stopped him\*\*\*

Eden: ooh I forgot that your bro is a wizard

Castiel: how many are you?

Eden: fuck you man....ooh you are so dead!

\*\*\*then he laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh I see he's a feisty one

Eden: you are all dead!

Ruslan: ooh really...I mean I killed your leader like a cockroach

Eden: and that's why your death is gonna be the most painful

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: you clearly don't know me man....you should ask your buddy here what im capable of now answer the question how many are you

Eden: enough to capture you and take you to the new leader

\*\*\*then he laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: remove this spell so I can deal with this fucker Madou!

\*\*\*Ruslan put Kazi down on the ground gently and he went closer to the circle\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't piss me off man you don't wanna see me when im mad

Eden: go to hell wizard

\*\*\*Ruslan's eyes turned black in color and suddenly it became a bit dark with dark clouds gathering around and cold air filled the area\*\*\*

Eden: you don't scare me wizard

Ruslan: ኃጢአታ ቸውን ካሌተ ሊከቡ ጊዜው ሲመጣ

\*\*\*then Eden's body made cracking sounds as it stood straight upright and he screamed....Ruslan was controlling his body now\*\*\*

Eden: what the fuck man!

\*\*\*he said with a spooked tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: ለእነሱ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታውቁ

\*\*\*he continued to speak using the forbidden language then Eden's left arm stretched forward\*\*\*

Eden: what are you doing to me man!

Castiel: answer us or he won't stop

\*\*\*Eden swallowed hard with his eyes popped\*\*\*

Eden: im not saying anything so go right ahead and kill me you bastard

\*\*\*he said breathing heavily\*\*\*

Castiel: ooh no he won't kill you..... just yet

Ruslan: ግን በእነሱ ላይ የእርምጃ ሻጥቶ ላይ

\*\*\*then Eden's right arm reached for his left arm and it forcefully ripped his left arm off his ice cold body and he screamed out loud then he looked at his ripped out arm looking spooked and Ruslan made him throw it to the ground\*\*\*

Castiel: still won't talk?

Eden: go... go to hell!

Castiel: ok

Ruslan: ቢያስቀምጥ ጠጉም እንኳ አያደርግ ጉጉም

\*\*\*then Eden's hand went to his right eye and it plucked the eye out and he screamed out loud falling to the ground\*\*\*

Castiel: are you ready to talk because he can go on until there's nothing left to rip off your body man

Eden: fine...fine I'll talk...I'll talk

\*\*\*then Ruslan's eyes went back to normal after he spoke some forbidden language words and he went to pick Kazi up\*\*\*

Ruslan: talk!

Eden: there's...there's 5 of us and we are all searching this state or province as they call it here and I guess I found you first

\*\*\*Ruslan just shook his head and he chanted a spell and the spell on the circle got lifted off and he started walking\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's all yours after you done with him burn him to ashes along with the house

\*\*\*Then Castiel smiled wickedly and he jumped on him\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\* he walked inside the gate and walked straight to the door and he banged the door hard\*\*\*

Woman: hei wena a se lebati la mmao kokota pila man ( hey that is not your mother's door knock properly)

\*\*\*a woman said inside the house and then the door opened wide and Dipuo's sister stood there with a smile forming on her face she has always had a crush on him\*\*\*

Woman: Jabu hey....wow ge o dipapatlile so? (wow you look good)

Jabu: bitsa suster la gao (call your sister)

Woman: Dipuo told me gore you moved on le le yellow bone le lengwe.....why mara abuti Jabu ke... (with some yellow bone....why brother Jabu when...)

Jabu: hai voetsek man Pelo ke rile bitsa Dipuo! ( hai piss off man Pelo ke rile bitsa Dipuo! ( hai piss off man Pelo I said call Dipuo!)

\*\*\*he interrupted her and she sulked\*\*\*

Pelo: mxm wa bora ( you are a bore)

\*\*\*then she called Dipuo and she came to the door and swallowed hard when she saw Jabu she couldn't believe how good looking he was....he even smelled extremely good and you could tell he was swimming in moola now well Pelo went inside to continue watching Tv...the next thing Jabu grabbed Dipuo by her hair and he pulled her out of the house roughly\*\*\*

Dipuo: ahh Jabu wankgobatsa ( ahh Jabu you are hurting me)

Jabu: o zamang Dipuo....o nyaka bonang wena heh (what are you trying to do Dipuo....what do you wanna see huh)

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Jabu: ota ko dladleng la ka and you insult my wife....my fucken wife! ( you come to my house and you insult my wife...my fucken wife)

\*\*\*he said shouting at her\*\*\*

Dipuo: Jabu askies

Jabu: o batlo nnyela Dipuo....o lapisitse ke liewe neh....o nyako boda heh? (you wanna shit yourself Dipuo....i see you tired of life .... I see you want to die)

Dipuo: im sorry Jabu



\*\*\*she said looking scared and she covered her face and Jabu let her go which surprised her cause the Jabu she knows would have slapped her or even punched her on her face \*\*\*

Jabu: e nne la bofelo you come to my house wankutlwa ( it should be the last time you come to my house you hear me)

\*\*\*he said pointing at her\*\*\*

Dipuo: I just wanted my son Jabu...she poisoned him against me

Jabu: hei...hei..hei....which son....which son Dipuo

Dipuo: I know I messed up but ke ngwanaka Jabu (he's my son)

Jabu: voetsek...voetsek jou hond....o khethile lerete (you chose a dick) over your own son and o re you messed up and my wife poisoned Sbu against you!

Dipuo: Jabu i....

Jabu: I said Voetsek!

\*\*\*he interrupted her\*\*\*

Jabu: my wife is off limits wankutlwa....o tla nnyela mo vroung ya ka ke tla o tllhaba kuku ka thipa sfebe wankutlwa....by the time ke fetsa ka wena marago nyana a ma kima a a go tlatla ke di ARVs le mokhaba wa go tlatla ke di sperms tsa go nkgga dipatji tsa di bari di tla fela wa sala e kare o tshwere ke final stage sa AIDS wankutlwa

( my wife is off limits you hear me....you'll shit yourself when it comes to my wife I'll stab your pussy with a knife bitch you hear me.... by the time im done with you that huge ass filled with ARV pills and that fat belly filled with sperms that smells like marijuana belonging to idiots/fools will perish and you'll end up looking like you are on a last stage of AIDS you hear me)

\*\*\*he said pointing at her\*\*\*

Jabu: o sa nyaka go ntlwaela masepa Dipuo (don't piss me off Dipuo) you know what im capable of so don't push me to my limits....bona mo Dipuo come at my wife again or insult her and you'll disappear without a trace.... you fokon shit nx

\*\*\* then he turned and walked to the gate leaving Dipuo sobbing and shaking with fear \*\*\*

.  
. .  
.  
  
\*\*\*\*AT CASTIEL'S OTHER HOUSE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Kazi woke up after Ruslan lifted the spell off her and she looked around and found Ruslan looking at her\*\*\*

Kazi: please...please don't hurt me

\*\*\*she said looking scared\*\*\*

Ruslan: hey relax I wont hurt you...I wont hurt you ok

\*\*\*he said with a warm smile and she nodded slowly and he helped her sit properly on the couch\*\*\*

Kazi: where...where am i

Ruslan: Castiel's other house

Kazi: Castiel is...is here?

\*\*\*she asked with a shaky voice looking around\*\*\*

Ruslan: relax he won't do anything to you or else I'll fuck him up pretty bad

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruslan: even though he's a ticking time bomb and an asshole most of the time but he saved your life...so that must mean he's not that bad right

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ruslan: im his younger brother Ruslan and you must be Kazi right

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Kazi: will he ever let me go

Ruslan: yeah I'll make sure of it ok

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Kazi: are you also a...

\*\*\*she couldn't even say it and he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: no and he was born like this so he didn't ask to be a hybrid vamp

Kazi: what's a hybrid

Castiel: a half human half vampire

\*\*\*she froze\*\*\*

Castiel: don't act shocked you did see the fangs skin and eyes I mean my skin now is still pale so

Ruslan: will you just shut it and go punch a wall or something

\*\*\*he showed Ruslan the middle finger and went to the kitchen\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's a special case don't mind him please

Kazi: how come you are not a...

Ruslan: same mother different fathers

\*\*\*she nodded and Castiel came back with a glass full of blood and he was drinking with a straw\*\*\*

Ruslan: really Cass

Castiel: what?

Ruslan: what the fuck is wrong with you huh...you gonna drink that in front of her

Castiel: my house man

\*\*\*Ruslan just shook his head and looked at Kazi\*\*\*

Ruslan: you are going back home tomorrow

Castiel: whoa....stop right there

Ruslan: I wasn't asking for your permission Cass

\*\*\*he said with a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Castiel: I own her Madou so don't get involved

\*\*\*he said taking a step forward\*\*\*

Ruslan: how much

Castiel: huh?

Ruslan: how much for her release since you suddenly love money so much

Castiel: she's not for sale now stay out of this Madou it doesn't involve you in any way

\*\*\*Ruslan got up\*\*\*

Ruslan: maybe I should let the Brethren kill you so she can be free....i mean you once chose a pussy over me so that shit might as well run in the family

Castiel: wow

\*\*\*then he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: so what is it gonna be brother

Castiel: fuck you Madou nx

\*\*\*then he walked away looking pissed\*\*\*

Ruslan: you going home tomorrow ok

\*\*\*Kazi nodded and she breathed a sigh of relief then Ruslan's phone rang he got up and went to another room\*\*\*

Ruslan: bros

Ray: you still at the same location

Ruslan: no we were made I found a Brethren there

Ray: fuck no

Ruslan: yeah so I'll send you a new location

Ray: ok send it now im on the road

Ruslan: ok...are you ok man you sound down

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: Pedro dos Santos is dead

Ruslan: what? damn....umm why do you sound hurt that he is

Ray: cause Celine her daughter is taking over from him man

Ruslan: ooh...shit

\*\*\*he said rubbing his head\*\*\*

Ray: and Mateo just called me and said she set up an appointment with me to discuss our contract...worse part she's coming here

Ruslan: shit!

Ray: im married now man and we both know what she really wants....that contract is important and that bitch might....

Ruslan: don't say it

\*\*\*he interrupted him\*\*\*

Ray: this is not only about me Ruu....Mateo and Diego depend on this contract...they have families they need to take care of....Serine's hospital bills are expensive and.... that bitch will give me a condition I know it....it might not be on this meeting im about to have with her but I know she will one of this days

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: maybe she over that man

\*\*\*Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: she's been after my dick for as long as I can remember and the only reason I didn't give in even though she would threaten me every now and then that she will lie and tell her father that she's pregnant for me is because Pedro warned me not to or else he'll stop doing business with us

Ruslan: shit!

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: just get here and we will figure a way out

Ray: ok

\*\*\*then they ended the call\*\*\*

Ruslan: this is bad

\*\*\*then he got up and went to make a drinkable potion for Kazi's internal wounds to heal fast and another one for Castiel to minimize his thirst and he waited for Ray\*\*\*

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

INSERT.....09

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

.

.

\*\*\*soon Ray arrived and he went inside and he greeted Kazi and him and Ruslan went to the dining room \*\*\*

Ray: where is he?

Castiel: right here

\*\*\*Ray turned and smirked looking at him\*\*\*

Ray: damn you look like shit

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: you asshole you have been here all along and you couldn't even call to say hi...piece of shit

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: I've been busy man

\*\*\*then they got closer to each other and they bro-hugged then Castiel broke it off quickly and took a step back\*\*\*

Castiel: careful I can see and hear your pulse on your neck pumping blood man and even though I have a feeling that your blood is bitter as fuck but im thirsty so....

\*\*\*Ray laughed and Castiel joined him\*\*\*

Ray: you good

Ruslan: yeah he's good and annoying now let's go sit down so he can tell us what the fuck is happening

\*\*\*he said with an annoyed tone\*\*\*

Castiel: wow but I thought all is forgiven between us brother

Ruslan: fuck off Castiel

\*\*\*Ray laughed and Castiel shook his head.....anyway they went to sit in Castiel's study room then Castiel started narrating everything Juana said and by the time he was done Ruslan was angry as hell and hurt so they let him go outside to cool off\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*A DAY LATER AT MENZI'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Menzi and Buhle's parents were sitting in the lounge Buhle's parents called this meeting after Kazi's ex-friend and Buhle's cousin Lele told them about Menzi and Kazi's affair thinking that's why Buhle committed suicide\*\*\*

Menzi: ok now that we are all here.... what is this meeting all about?

Buhle's father: Ngcobo we just heard from Lele about you cheating on our daughter is that why she killed herself?

\*\*\*he asked with an angry voice\*\*\*

Menzi: ang'zwanga (excuse me)

Buhle's mother: you killed my daughter ngo bufebe bakho nja ndini ( with your whoring ways you dog)

\*\*\*she said with a pained and angry voice\*\*\*

Buhle's father: hai man Khethiwe

\*\*\*Menzi chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Khethiwe: ubulale indodakazi yam baba ka Buhle (he killed my daughter)...my daughter is gone and he killed her



\*\*\*she said crying and Menzi got up as he was getting angry\*\*\*

Menzi: get out of my house

\*\*\*he said with a low tone\*\*\*

Buhle's father: heh?

Menzi: ngithe phumani ni phele emzini wami! ( I said get out of my house)

Buhle's Father: Ngcobo the meeting is not yet done

Menzi: what meeting....first of all you don't even know what happened and you are here in my house busy calling me names....your precious daughter is a killer she killed innocent children because of mere jealousy

Khethiwe: unamanga....you are lying....you're just trying to shift the blame to Buhle cause she's not here to defend herself

\*\*\*he just went upstairs and soon came back with her suicide letter and he threw it at Buhle's father\*\*\*

Menzi: that good for nothing daughter of yours killed my unborn kids just because she couldn't handle me wanting a second wife.....i forgave her for fucking my father years back and getting pregnant by him and she....

\*\*\*he stopped talking as he was getting angrier and he went to pour himself a drink breathing heavily\*\*\*

Khethiwe: she didn't write this....my daughter would never do something like this

\*\*\*she said after she read the letter and she threw it on the floor\*\*\*

Buhle's father: what do you mean she slept with your father....on the letter she apologized for....

\*\*\*he couldn't even finish it\*\*\*

Menzi: why do you think she was hospitalized that time...ooh I remember she lied and told you that she was mugged right?

\*\*\*then he chuckled bitterly\*\*\*

Khethiwe: you are lying man!

\*\*\*she shouted at him\*\*\*

Menzi: well I found her in bed with my father fucking and I beat the shit out of her....i wanted to kill her so bad but then I thought of my child....then three months later she found out she was pregnant and months later she gave birth to a baby girl and I did a DNA test and I wasn't the father but guess what my father was

\*\*\*buhle's mother started crying again with her hands shaking\*\*\*

Menzi: I only kept quiet of all this because of my kids so don't come to my house and accuse me of bullshit!

\*\*\*then he got up\*\*\*

Menzi: now please leave my house....you can even bury her cause im not interested in burying someone who killed my unborn babies and tell that cousin of hers that she's fired nx

\*\*\*then his phone rang and he stood up and walked away leaving Buhle's parents shocked and in an bad emotional state\*\*\*

Menzi: yah

Man: she's here man....Kazi is here at the police station

Menzi: heh?

\*\*\*he said as he stopped walking with his heart beating fast\*\*\*

Man: she was just found outside the police station yard passed out....she's still alive and an ambulance is on its way here

Menzi: she...she's there

\*\*\*he asked making sure he heard him correctly\*\*\*

Man: yeah man she's here...your Kazi is here

Menzi: fuck...ummm.... im on my way...im on my way

\*\*\*he dropped the call and quickly went to grab his car keys and wallet and he rushed out leaving Buhle's parents still sitting in the lounge\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*AT THE HOSPITAL \*\*\*

\*\*\*Kazi slowly opened her eyes and she scanned the room and she cleared her throat and Menzi quickly turned and when he saw that she was awake he rushed to her\*\*\*

Menzi: hey you are awake

\*\*\*he said smiling with tears in his eyes\*\*\*

Kazi: Me...Menzi?

Menzi: yes baby it's me....you're safe baby...I can't believe you're here...I thought I'd never see you again...I searched for you everywhere but it's like you disappeared into thin air

\*\*\* he said that and kissed her forehead but she didn't say anything she just blinked looking lost\*\*\*

Menzi: who took you...who dared me sthandwa sam?

\*\*\*he said looking into her eyes but she continued to blink looking lost\*\*\*

Menzi: Ntandokazi?

Kazi: i...I was kidnapped?

\*\*\*Menzi frowned\*\*\*

Menzi: what do you mean by that?

Kazi: I remember parking my car after talking to you on the phone and I felt like someone or something was watching me so I decided to turn and go back to the car and wait until you arrive then I heard a loud bang and I fell feeling pain on my stomach and the next thing I felt like someone or something was holding me and we were moving at a very high speed and I passed out and I just woke up now

\*\*\*he looked at her worried\*\*\*

Menzi: ummm ok let...let me go see your doctor I'll be back ok

\*\*\*he kissed her forehead and walked out...he found a nurse and asked her to call for Kazi's doctor and she did and soon he arrived and shook hands with him\*\*\*

Menzi: what's wrong with her doc I mean she can't remember that she was kidnapped for days

Doctor: I suspect that she's suffering from Transient global amnesia or it could be retrograde amnesia or anterograde amnesia which is bad kind of amnesia

\*\*\*Menzi brushed his head roughly\*\*\*

Menzi: ok simple english doc

Doctor: ok...ummm with Transient global amnesia is a sudden temporary loss of memory for events during after and sometimes before the event that caused the amnesia and retrograde amnesia is the inability to retrieve information that was acquired before a particular date of an accident or operation or even during an accident

Menzi: ok how long will it take for her to regain her memory back

Doctor: well a therapist is the right doctor to give you a proper diagnosis about her type of amnesia but what I know is we should pray that she's suffering from Transient global amnesia cause it gets resolved within a short period of time

\*\*\*Menzi swallowed hard\*\*\*

Doctor: I have assigned her a good therapist and she'll be here tomorrow around 11 am and she will give you a proper diagnosis

Menzi: ok... umm she was shot

Doctor: ooh yes and whoever took her treated her wound like a professional...she doesn't have any infections and the wound is healing very well and fast

\*\*\*Menzi clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Menzi: she...she was pregnant so is....

\*\*\*the doctor sighed\*\*\*

Doctor: yes I meant to tell you about that but I was quickly called to the ER... ummm whomever took her also professionally cleaned her womb and luckily no damage was done to it

\*\*\*Menzi clenched his jaws getting emotional \*\*\*

Menzi: ummm ok thank you

\*\*\*the doctor nodded\*\*\*

Doctor: my advice is don't force her to remember what happened to her give her time and let a professional help her the right way cause forcing her to remember may do more damage just be patient with her and also be there for her and get her the help she needs

\*\*\*Menzi nodded and the doctor left then Menzi sighed heavily and went back to her ward and found her eating slowly\*\*\*

Menzi: hey

\*\*\*she looked up and he smiled faintly at her as he walked closer to her bed\*\*\*

Menzi: im glad you safe

\*\*\*he said and kissed her forehead and she looked down\*\*\*

Kazi: how...how long was I gone?

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Menzi: a few days

Kazi: who...who shot me and why

\*\*\*then her eyes popped out and her hand went to her stomach\*\*\*

Kazi: my babies....my babies...are they ok?

\*\*\*she said with tears in her eyes looking at Menzi with her hands shaking and Menzi swallowed hard getting emotional\*\*\*

Kazi: Menzi are my babies ok?

Menzi: im sorry but they...

\*\*\*\*she shook her head repeatedly with tears running down her cheeks and her bottom lip shaking\*\*\*

Kazi: no no no

Menzi: im sorry sthandwa sam....im sorry

\*\*\*she let out a heart wrenching cry and Menzi held her tight as she let it all out with his own tears running down his face\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\* later at night Menzi was sleeping on the couch inside Kazi's ward while Kazi was sleeping on the hospital bed ...on the far corner of the room Castiel was standing in the shadows since the lights were deemed watching her sleep then his eyes went to Menzi and he clenched his jaws and his eyes changed color but then he calmed himself down because he didn't wanna cause a scene cause the brethren are on his trail.....then Kazi moved a bit and his eyes went back to her and he continued to watch her sleep until around 4 in the morning then he apparated from that room to the parking lot \*\*\*

.  
. .  
.  
\*\*\*\*TWO DAYS LATER\*\*\*\*

Celine: hey thanks for seeing me...I know you're a busy man

\*\*\*she said shaking his hand\*\*\*

Ray: mmmmh

\*\*\*he said sitting down\*\*\*

Celine: are you still the whiskey guy or now you into beer or gin

Ray: im good...im cutting off any kind of alcohol....health reasons

\*\*\*he lied....he just didn't trust her and well her eyes popped out in a surprised manner then she chuckled\*\*\*

Celine: wow that's a first so a cup of tea will do for you huh?

Ray: just say what brought you here Celine

\*\*\* she laughed and took a sip of her drink\*\*\*

Celine: aren't you gonna say your condolences

Ray: ok my condolences Celine.... now why am I here

Celine: wow cold much....anyway you are here because of our business together

Ray: im listening

Celine: well im reviewing contracts my father made when he was still alive and im gonna cancel those I think are more of a liability to us than an asset

Ray: ok and?

Celine: ok La Parca are you always this cold?

Ray: im not your friend Celine and this is not a social meeting so just say what you wanna say and stop wasting my time

Celine: jeez fine

\*\*\*she leaned back on her seat and looked at him\*\*\*

Celine: well im not happy with the arrangement you had with my father... Que su alma descanse en paz (may his soul rest in peace)

Ray: go on

Celine: I checked our books and your contract and it seems like you benefit as much as we do on this deal but we do most of the work

Ray: and what makes you say that

Celine: the trucks that are used are ours and the men are also ours but you get 50 percent that's not right La Parca....we do all the work

Ray: the contact is mine and im the one paying for bribes and I also make sure the cargo and your men gets to your father safely so don't say shit you know nothing about

Celine: our men's life are the ones that are always in danger and if those trucks get seized it will be our asses on the line not yours

\*\*\*Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: so?

Celine: so we lower your own share of the percentage to 40 percent or the deal is off

\*\*\*Ray laughed then his phone rang it was Mbali and he let it ring until it stopped\*\*\*

Ray: you must be drunk

Celine: excuse me



Ray: you heard me

\*\*\*then his phone rang again and it was Mbali again and he let it ring and he decided to put his phone on silent mode\*\*\*

Celine: so you think the percentage you are getting is fair

Ray: lady do you think we are running a beauty salon here

Celine: please don't insult me or you will not like what I will do

\*\*\*Ray leaned forward\*\*\*

Ray: don't make a mistake of threatening me Celine...I don't take it lightly

\*\*\*he said looking straight into her eyes and she saw his eyes change colour quickly and she moved her eyes and she looked down briefly\*\*\*

Celine: I didn't come here to stain my expensive dress with some dirty blood La Parca im here for business

Ray: then tell your sniper or bodyguard that when he takes that shot he shouldn't miss cause if he does nc nc nc

\*\*\*then he got up\*\*\*

Celine: sit down im still talking!

Ray: listen here Celine if you can't play with the big dogs say so but don't come here and tell me rubbish....the contact is mine and I only know him and his location so if you can't handle how things are done then say so and I'll go look for another willing partner

Celine: no one has the same roads as we do La Parca you need us as much as we need you but you need us more so rethink what you are about to do

Ray: don't you have an adviser or something cause if you don't then you need one...your thinking is premature and if you're not carefully you'll run daddy dearest's legacy to the ground...and remember your father's enemies are waiting for you to fuck up so they can still your clients and if you're not careful I might be the first one they steal

Celine: so do we have a deal La Parca

\*\*\*she said ignoring him and Ray shook his head and he took his car keys from the table\*\*\*

Ray: call me once you done with your menstruation circle Celine so we can discuss some serious business and not this nonsense....i would say it was nice seeing you but it's not so safe trip back home

\*\*\*he then fastened his suit jacket and he walked to the door of the restaurant and out he went and Celine banged the table frustrated\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. . .

\*\*\*later at night he was in bed with Mbali after they put Saint to sleep....she had her head on his chest while he played with her hair\*\*\*

Mbali: how was your day?

Ray: it was ok

Mbali: mmmmh so you were at the office all day?

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Ray: yeah why?

Mbali: you sure about that?

\*\*\*he pushed her off him slowly and he looked at her\*\*\*

Ray: what is it that you really wanna ask me my flower?

Mbali: fine...who was that woman you were having lunch with?

\*\*\*Ray raise his eyebrow looking at her\*\*\*

Ray: and how do you know I was having lunch with some woman

Mbali: just answer me Ray

Ray: and I asked you a question

\*\*\*he sat up straight and she did too\*\*\*

Ray: are you having me followed Mbali?

Mbali: are you gonna answer my question or not Ray

Ray: you having me followed aren't you...

\*\*\*he chuckled and got out of bed\*\*\*

Ray: you are having me followed Mbali?

\*\*\*he said with a pissed off tone\*\*\*

Mbali: why are you making it a big deal Ray you also have men keeping tabs of me and im not complaining

Ray: its for your safety damn it...what's your excuse!

\*\*\*he said raising his voice and she kept quiet\*\*\*

Ray: I asked you a fucken question

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Mbali: we...we can't have sex Ray cause I haven't healed properly and you love sex

Ray: so?

Mbali: I cant give it to you and sometimes when I want to blow you you stop me so what am I supposed to think huh

\*\*\*Ray chuckled while shaking his head getting angrier\*\*\*

Ray: so that little brain of yours thinks im cheating right

Mbali: please don't insult my brain Ray ok just answer me...who's that woman you were having lunch with

Ray: you know what im not doing this with you Mbali

\*\*\*he said wearing his sleepers and she got out of bed\*\*\*

Mbali: where are you going?

Ray: I need some air

Mbali: so you're going to walk out on me when im talking to you

Ray: first of all we are not talking but you are accusing me of useless shit so im gonna go out for some air before I say something I know I'll regret

\*\*\*then he walked out and Mbali sat down on the edge of the bed and tears ran down her cheeks...the following morning Mbali walked in the kitchen and Ray was standing leaning on the counter staring into space with a cup of coffee on the counter next to him....he only came back to his senses when she greeted him\*\*\*

Ray: hey

\*\*\*he greeted back and he drank his coffee and Mbali started making a cup of coffee for herself\*\*\*

Ray: im gonna come back a bit late tonight

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ray: im talking to you

Mbali: I heard you

\*\*\*she said with a lace of annoyance in her voice and Ray shook his head and he put his cup down and he went closer to her and attempted to kiss her cheek but she moved her face\*\*\*

Ray: really now?

\*\*\*she didn't say anything and he chuckled and he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ray: I should be the one who's mad for having me followed

Mbali: first of all im not having you followed I went out to have lunch with Kalu cause I wanted to get out of this house for a couple of hours and I saw you with her when I was passing by some fancy restaurant...I called you and you looked at your phone and ignored my call

Ray: didn't it occur to you that maybe that was an important business meeting

\*\*\* he said getting pissed and she chuckled\*\*\*

Mbali: you always answer my calls Ray...you even once answered my call while you were in the middle of an arms deal meeting

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Mbali: I just hope she's worth it...the only reason that I cant have sex with you is because I haven't healed so if waiting for me to heal is not worth it then just know that once I have proof that you are cheating on me Ray even Saint being angry at you will be the least of your problems

Ray: im not cheating on you what the fuck is wrong with you huh....your insecurities are starting to piss me off Mbali....i have a lot that im dealing with so I don't need to deal with your shit right now

\*\*\*he shouted at her with an angry voice\*\*\*

Mbali: ok

\*\*\*she moved away from him and attempted to walk away but then she stopped and turned to look at him\*\*\*

Mbali: all this baby fat will go away once I hit the gym Ray and my new stretch marks will disappear with a laser treatment and I'll go do my hair and nails and I'll be myself again....so if this "ME" is turning you off even though im like this because of your son I carried in my womb and almost died while giving birth to him then shame on you....you no longer shower with me you don't want me to even give you a blow job anymore we hardly spend time together and now you avoid my calls when you are having lunch with other women....

Ray: are you done being dramatic

\*\*\* he interrupted her and she looked at him with tears in her eyes\*\*\*

Mbali: wow ok...just so you know there are men who would give up their wealth just to tap this ass

\*\*\*she said grabbing her ass\*\*\*

Mbali: so don't think you are doing me a favour by being with me...like I said i will go back to my old self so yah don't think you're doing me any favours Raymond nx

Ray: what did you just say?

\*\*\*he said with a scary frown on his face and she walked away\*\*\*

Ray: MBALI!

\*\*\*he called after her but she ignored him and he stood there replaying what she just said and he chuckled angrily\*\*\*

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....10

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*Ray walked inside their bedroom and found Mbali getting dressed in a short vintage summer dress and he frowned...well he didn't even go to work after what Mbali said to him\*\*\*

Ray: going somewhere

Mbali: the mall

Ray: to do what?

Mbali: some shopping and to also do my hair and nails

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ray: what about Saint

\*\*\*she stopped applying makeup and she looked at him\*\*\*

Mbali: Ruu said its ok he'll look after him for a couple of hours until im back

Ray: you gonna leave my son with Ruu just to go gallivanting in the mall with that short dress!

\*\*\*she raised an eyebrow looking at him\*\*\*

Mbali: what's your problem Ray mmmmh.... you know I would leave him with sisNtombi or sisKedi or the rest of my brothers wives but they don't know about Saint and I don't want them to freak out when he comes out

Ray: this is not about that Mbali and you know it

Mbali: then what is it about then Raymond cause right now you're making a big deal out of nothing....if I didn't wanna do my hair and nails I would go with him but hairdryers and those chemicals that fill the air inside salons is not good for him

\*\*\*She said with a frown on her face but with a calm tone but you could clearly see that she was pissed off\*\*\*

Ray: why do you suddenly want to go do your hair and nails huh....you are a nursing mother Mbali so you don't need to look good

Mbali: askies?

\*\*\*she said making a face looking at him\*\*\*

Mbali: angithi you don't find me attractive anymore so bhuti I want to fix myself so my husband stops looking outside

\*\*\*Ray shook his head chuckling...clearly pissed\*\*\*

Ray: how many times must I say IM NOT CHEATING ON YOU DAMN IT!

\*\*\*she just looked at him without saying anything cause she could see he was now angry\*\*\*

Ray: THAT WOMAN IS A BUSINESS ASSOCIATE AND I DON'T EVEN SEE HER LIKE THAT...WHY IS IT SO HARD FOR YOU TO UNDERSTAND HUH?

\*\*\*she looked away feeling scared cause he had a scary look on his face\*\*\*

Ray: im sorry I didn't answer your calls but I just couldn't

\*\*\*she didn't say anything and he rubbed his hair roughly and he looked at her intensely\*\*\*

Ray: I have a lot on my mind Mbali so I don't need to come home to all these this house is supposed to be my peaceful place I can't be arguing and fighting fuckers out there and come home and argue with you too over useless things

\*\*\*she continued to keep quiet and he sighed\*\*\*

Ray: I love you Mbali isn't that enough reason for you to trust me

Mbali: sometimes love is not enough like now its not

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Ray: what's that supposed to mean

Mbali: you're too old for me to reprimand or teach about marriage or how to treat your wife Raymond...if you don't know what's wrong and right at your age who am I to show you

\*\*\*she bend down and wore her shoes with Ray standing there boiling with anger\*\*\*

Ray: what did you just say to me?

\*\*\*she kept quiet and he went to her and held her upper arm\*\*\*

Ray: what did you just say\*\*\*

Mbali: the truth

\*\*\*she said with a straight face and he chuckled and he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ray: is that how you talk to me now

\*\*\*she didn't say anything but her heart was beating fast cause she knew one slap from him might send her to the hospital\*\*\*

Ray: I asked you a question

\*\*\*she kept quiet\*\*\*

Ray: you can't talk now huh?

Mbali: let go of me Ray

Ray: you think im your fucken mate now huh...you talk to me any how Mbali....we are mates now huh?

\*\*\*she blinked fast fighting off her tears cause she was scared now cause he looked angry with his eyes turning red\*\*\*\*

Ray: you disrespecting me so I can fuck you up bad and you'll run to daddy is that it?

Mbali: Ray let me go

\*\*\*she said with a shaky voice and he looked at her with a scary look for some time until he let her go and he clicked his tongue and he picked his son up and walked out...then Mbali's tears ran down her cheeks and she sobbed until she calmed down then she cleaned herself up and reapplied her makeup and took her bag phone and car keys and she went downstairs and she found Ray and Ruslan in the lounge with Saint crying\*\*\*

Mbali: hey Ruu



\*\*\*she said with a low tone and she put her things down and she went to take Saint from Ray who still looked angry and she sat down and breast fed him\*\*\*

Ruslan: you ok?

\*\*\*she nodded and focused on Saint while massaging his head slowly and gently as he suck on her breast for dear life....then Ruu looked at Ray who was busy on his phone with a frown on his face and he shook his head and he got up and walked to the kitchen\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't bring takeaways I'll cook

Mbali: ok

\*\*\*after Saint was done she burped him and held him humming a song for him until he fell asleep and she went to put him in his baby cot and looked at Ray\*\*\*

Mbali: he already ate and his bottles are in his bottle warmer...call me if he gives you trouble

Ray: he's my son...what you think im incapable of taking care of my own son

\*\*\*She swallowed hard and picked her things and walked out and Ray sighed clenching his jaws and he rubbed his eyes \*\*\*

Ruslan: was that necessary?

Ray: stay out of my marital business man

Ruslan: ooh is it?

Ray: just stop ok

Ruslan: well she's gonna leave you...continue with your bullshit and you will

\*\*\*then he went back to the kitchen leaving Ray with a frown on his face and he got up and he took one of the baby monitors and he followed Ruu\*\*\*

Ray: why did you say that?

Ruslan: you said I should stay out of your marital business

\*\*\*he said chopping vegetables now\*\*\*

Ray: can you stop acting like a girl and explain what you said to me

Ruslan: why are you angry Ray huh....you seem agitated and angry why

\*\*\*Ray looked down and he went to the fridge and took out a bottle of water and drank from it\*\*\*

Ray: I don't know what you're talking about

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled shaking his head and he went back to cutting his vegetables\*\*\*

Ruslan: you lying and I hate it when you do that especially knowing that I can read you like the back of my hand

\*\*\*Ray sighed and he sat down\*\*\*

Ruslan: what did you do?

\*\*\*he took out his phone and went to the message he received from Celine and he opened it and gave the phone to Ruslan who read the message and he shook his head giving Ray his phone back\*\*\*

Ray: she send it in the morning

Ruslan: is it true?

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: you were right she's gonna leave me

Ruslan: so it's true

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: and the baby?

Ray: I don't know about no baby man....i used protection ok and I only fucked her once that time and I never saw her again

\*\*\*Ruslan put the knife down and he sighed and wiped his hands\*\*\*

Ruslan: you need to tell her before Celine does

\*\*\*Ray shook his head getting up\*\*\*

Ray: not happening

Ruslan: there's a baby involved Ray....i would say let's kill that bitch Celine and we take this to our graves if that baby didn't look like Saint and you

\*\*\*Ray started breathing heavily pacing around\*\*\*

Ray: that's why she's here man....she's not here cause she wants me to fuck her she's here to ruin me....she knows about Mbali and our son and...

\*\*\*he stopped and sat down\*\*\*

Ray: she tried with that contract shit and I didn't budge even though I really need it and now she decided to put all her cards on the table

Ruslan: this is bad bro

\*\*\*then he looked at him\*\*\*

Ruslan: you have to tell Mbali about everything

\*\*\*Ray shook his head repeatedly\*\*\*

Ray: I can't do that man I can't.... I'll lose her Ruu and I can't have that

Ruslan: you know she's gonna tell her man so it's better she hears the truth from you

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Ray: I can't

Ruslan: bro

Ray: no Ruu I can't and im gonna make sure she doesn't tell Mbali

Ruslan: what about your daughter

\*\*\*Ray kept quiet\*\*\*

Ruslan: you gonna keep her a lie too?

Ray: let's just drop it ok.... I'll figure something out

Ruslan: if she wasn't your child I would help you take that bitch out but she knows where the girl is

\*\*\*Ray didn't say anything he just sat down and he brushed his head roughly\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. . .

\*\*\*They just finished eating and Ray was lying on the couch with his son sleeping on his chest while Ruslan was busy on his laptop with the Tv playing in the background...they heard a car driving in and soon Mbali walked with a mixture of hurt and anger plastered on her face\*\*\*

Ruslan: what's wrong Mbali?

\*\*\*Ray quickly sat up making sure he doesn't wake Saint up and Mbali walked to Ray and she took Saint from him and went to put him inside his crib that is in his second nursery downstairs and Ruslan and Ray gave each other the look and Ruslan sighed looking down while Ray just shook his head repeatedly and he got up when Mbali walked back to him and she took her phone and pressed on it for a sec and she slammed it his hard chest and he took it and read the message that was send to her asking her if she knows that Ray has a

one year old daughter in Venezuela the baby girl was a female version of Saint and you could see Ray in her too.... She has been with Ray for over a year and three to four months meaning the child was conceived and born when they were dating \*\*\*

Mbali: is it true

\*\*\*she said breathing heavily while looking at him with an angry face and Ray clenched his jaws and he brushed his beard\*\*\*

Ray: let me explain my flower

\*\*\*she chuckled angrily\*\*\*

Mbali: ooh im your flower now Raymond

Ruslan: Mbali please clam down

Mbali: Ruslan if you know what's good for you then you better stay out of this.... please

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed shaking his head....he knew things are bad in fact really bad\*\*\*

Mbali: answer my question Raymond did you cheat on me and is this child yours

\*\*\*Ray swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ray: it was a mistake I regret terribly my flower

\*\*\*tears ran down her cheeks with her bottom lip trembling\*\*\*

Ray: im sorry my love i.... I swear it meant nothing

\*\*\*he said trying to touch her and out of the blue she punched him on his face and Ray touched his lip to see if he was bleeding and indeed he was...he had a cut\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh shit....

\*\*\*then she jumped on him and started throwing punches at him screaming while Ray just blocked her punches ....her punches weren't weak they were strong meaning she had been trained to fight or to defend herself\*\*\*

Ruslan: Mbali stop!

\*\*\*he said rushing to them and she grabbed her from her back and pulled her away from Ray who now seemed angry\*\*\*

Mbali: LET GO OF ME RUSLAN....LET ME GO!

\*\*\*then Ray grabbed Mbali by her upper arm tight looking at her with a deadly look and Ruslan stood between them trying to loosen Ray's grip on Mbali's arm\*\*\*

Ruslan: Ray don't...don't man...don't

Ray: you laid your hands on me Mbali?

Mbali: you deserve more you cheating bastard....you deserve more nja ndini! ( you dog)

Ruslan: Ray stop...let go of her man....don't do this please

Ray: you laid your hands on me Mbali

Mbali: I should've punched your stupid balls instead since you don't know how to keep them inside you trousers

Ruslan: MBALI STOP STALKING!

Ray: what did you just say?

\*\*\* Mbali pushed Ruslan away but he quickly got his balance and stood between them again\*\*\*

Mbali: get out of the way Ruslan

\*\*\*she said breathing heavily and Ray let her go\*\*\*

Ruslan: stop it....this is not the right way to solve problems!

Mbali: who said I want to solve problems with this cheating manwhore...who huh?

\*\*\*Ray pushed Ruslan away and got closer to Mbali...he was taller than her\*\*\*

Ray: ENOUGH OF YOUR DISRESPECT.....I GET YOU ARE ANGRY BUT DISRESPECT ME ONE MORE TIME WOMAN....

Mbali: or what?...or what huh?

\*\*\*she interrupted him taking a step closer\*\*\*

Ruslan: guys come on

Ray: Mbali?

\*\*\*he said and chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: Mbali stop.... ok just stop

\*\*\*then he looked at an angry Ray\*\*\*

Ruslan: you too stop Ray....what the fuck is wrong with the two of you....why are you behaving like hooligans huh.... you are married for fucks sake!

\*\*\*he shouted at them\*\*\*

Mbali: i.... I let a good guy go....Darren was my age mate and he definitely has never made a deal with the devil and earned himself a demon attached to his soul and my son wouldn't

have a demon too attached to his soul....i wouldn't have fought with my father and brothers because of you

\*\*\*Ray's face changed from angry to hurt\*\*\*

Mbali: I.... I sacrificed everything for you....my relationship with my father almost got ruined cause I chose you and my brother had to lay his hand on me for the first time ever cause I chose you and still that wasn't enough Raymond....still I wasn't enough

Ruslan: Mbali calm...

Mbali: STAY OUT OF THIS!

\*\*\*she interrupted him\*\*\*

Mbali: you went out there and fucked some whore and made a baby while at it....you are no different from Kyle nx well since I left Kyle for cheating is best i leave your ass too....this joke of a marriage is over you hear me....its over!

\*\*\*she said then she turned to walk away but Ray grabbed her arms and she turned and slapped him across his face and he looked the other way clenching his jaws with anger taking over him and Mbali pushed him back and he stumbled back but balanced himself with the couch and she rushed to him and started hitting him as he blocked her punches and slaps then he pushed her back with a bit force and slapped her so hard that she fell on the floor and saw stars for a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: RAY!

Ray: didn't I warn you about laying your hands on me!

\*\*\*Mbali got up crying and blood was coming out of her mouth and nose and her cheek was red and it was also slowly swelling then out of the blue a hard force hit Ray and he flew across the room and hit the wall with his back and fell on the floor then windy sounds filled the lounge and black smoke formed a human figure next to Mbali\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh shit!

\*\*\*he said running towards a passed out Ray and he felt something grabbing him by his throat and he choked struggling to breathe as Mbali stood there shocked\*\*\*

Ruslan: Sa...Saint stop

\*\*\*but Saint didn't let him go then he chanted a spell and Saint quickly let him go as he felt electrocuted all of a sudden then Ruslan quickly put a protection spell around Ray and he also protected himself too....Saint rushed to Ray but he couldn't get to him because some sort of an invisible barrier was stopping him\*\*\*

Saint: YOU TOUCHED MOMMY!

\*\*\* a scratchy and creepy voice said\*\*\*

Saint: NO ONE HURTS MOMMY AND LIVES TO TELL A TALE!

Mbali: S..Saint....

Ruslan: you need to go back to sleep Saint

Saint: I SAID NO ONE HURTS MOMMY AND LIVES TO TELL A TALE!

Mbali: oooh God.... oooh God

\*\*\*she said shaking with fear\*\*\*

Ruslan: Saint this is between Ray and Mbali it got nothing to do with you

\*\*\*he tried to convince him but it fell on deaf ears\*\*\*

Saint: DIDN'T YOU HEAR ME it got nothing to do with you

\*\*\*he tried to convince him but it fell on deaf ears\*\*\*

Saint: DIDN'T YOU HEAR ME I SAID NO ONE HURTS MOMMY AND LIVES TO TELL A TALE!

\*\*\*Saint said with an angry voice and the floor started to shake\*\*\*

Ruslan: Mbali talk to him!

\*\*\*Mbali just stood there shocked and visibly shaking with her eyes popped out...she tried to open her mouth but nothing came out\*\*\*

Ruslan: shit!

\*\*\*Saint went to Ray and tried to punch through the protection spell....as for Mbali all she saw was a dark smoke formed like a human figure trying punching something invisible trying to get to Ray but it couldn't\*\*\*

Mbali: R...Ray....RAY!....STOP...SAINT STOP!

\*\*\*Saint didn't listen to her....she tried calling for Saint to stop but he couldn't....seeing the blood on Mbali's face triggered something in his soulless demon figure\*\*\*

Ruslan: fuck it...

\*\*\*he used his right pinkie-finger that had a long well taken off sharp nail and he cut the top of his left hand with it pushing it deeper and thick blood came out then he chanted a spell in the forbidden language and his eyes changed colour and they became black then windy sounds were heard inside the house especially where they were and it became dark as if it was night time with the windows being covered with a dark smoke \*\*\*

Ruslan: እምመጤ ይህ ጥሩው አስማተኛ ጥሩ ልምምድ እንዲያስተምረው.....ስለዚህ ሊወለድ የነበረው..... የአጥንት ቅዱስ ስ ብዕናለመያ ዝይ ችላ ልጊዜውሲ መጣ ለነፍ ሳቸው እመጣለሁ. (with my blood i call upon you great one the one death bow down to....the one death fears....La Parca I command you to wake up now and save your carrier)

\*\*\*he spoke in the forbidden language and Saint stopped and the black smoke figure turned slowly looking at Ruslan and then it suddenly became quiet...too quiet then a loud scary sound filled the house and screams of tortured souls were heard all around the house then Ruslan lifted the protection spell around Ray and he quickly protected a traumatized shaking Mbali...then smoke filled around Ray then lightning hit inside the house and that smoke lifted Ray up still covering him then La Parca emerged from the smoke and he floated on that black smoke holding his sythe and Saint moved back slowly while Mbali visibly shook as she also moved back slowly\*\*\*

Mbali: this...this is not true...he...he can't be real...he can't be real

\*\*\*she said with her heart beating really fast\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. . .

\*\*\*\*\*NIGERIA\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Mj continued to kiss her as he rubbed her clit in circular mode and she moaned\*\*\*

Amara: ooh Junior....yesss

\*\*\*he inserted his middle finger inside her pussy and she held him tight and moaned then he finger fucked her for some time with her biting her bottom lip and moaning.... then he stopped and pulled his finger out and sucked on it and he went to her face and French kissed her making her taste herself he then stopped kissing her and got off the bed and took off the rest of his clothes and his dick stood firm and hard with veins popping dripping and he bit his lower lip stroking it\*\*\*

Amara: gosh Junior I need you now please stop with the torture abeg

\*\*\*he smiled at her\*\*\*

Mj: touch yourself and also play with yourself babe...do it babe

\*\*\*she bit her lower lip and she grabbed her breasts and moved her hands down going to her lower body and she opened her legs wide and she started stroking her clit increasing her pace with each stroke while Mj jerked his dick slowly\*\*\*

Mj: fuck....

\*\*\*his hands started shaking and his dick oozed more pre-cum getting more painful as it got harder then he got on top of the bed and got between her legs and grabbed a condom and



quickly tore the cover and he put it on at one go then he positioned himself and he pushed himself in hard and he groaned while she moaned out louder\*\*\*

Mj: fuck!!!

\*\*\*he then bend down and kissed her then he started moving slowly in and out of her increasing his pace with every thrust\*\*\*

Amara: oooh Junior

Mj: fuck....i love you Amara....i love you my flower

\*\*\*he said that and pulled her right leg up and he fucked her hard with Amara screaming and calling out his name while Mj was busy groaning.... after a few thrusts he pulled her other leg up and positioned himself and fucked her brains out....he went deeper and Amara's body started shaking as an orgasm hit her hard and she screamed and Mj didn't stop instead he went faster and faster chasing his own orgasm with Amara screaming and speaking in tongues then after a few thrusts he went too fast going in and out of her with three thrusts then he slammed into her hard pushing in deeper nutting inside the condom\*\*\*

Mj: FUCKKKKKEN.....SHIIITTTTTT!AHHH AHHH AHHH

\*\*\*then he collapsed on top of her breathing heavily....after some time he raised his head and smiled at her then he perked her lips...this was their third round\*\*\*

Mj: you ok?

\*\*\*she nodded then he kissed her forehead and he pulled out and sat on the edge of the bed taking off the condom and also checking for any leaks and when he saw that it was ok he wrapped it with a tissue and went to flush it then he ran the shower and went to pick Amara up and they went to shower\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*they were now lying in bed fully clothed with Amara's head on his chest\*\*\*

Amara: Junior

Mj: babe

Amara: ummm why did you call me your flower?

\*\*\*Mj's body tense but he quickly relaxed trying to find a better suited lie\*\*\*

Mj: you don't like me calling you that?

Amara: ummm it's just you never called me that before

\*\*\*he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Mj: well ummm...it's a funny story you know....well Kev LJ and I we were talking about pet names we use to call our girlfriends they said their own and I felt bad because I only call you babe and it's just a simple and random name to call someone you love so I lied and told them I call you my flower so I told myself I'd call you that from time to time

\*\*\*he lied to her and she smiled widely and raised her head and kissed him\*\*\*

Amara: that's soo sweet baby

\*\*\* he smiled weakly at her and they kissed again\*\*\*

Mj: "damn there's no way im calling her that again"

\*\*\*he thought\*\*\*

Mj: so did you convince your parents about allowing you to study in South Africa next year

\*\*\*her body tensed and she sat up and so did he\*\*\*

Mj: what's wrong?

Amara: they refused Junior...I tried but they just won't reconsider...they want me to go study at UK

Mj: but Amara we talk about this

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Amara: I know baby but....why don't we both go to the UK instead

\*\*\*he got off the bed\*\*\*

Mj: I told you my reasons Amara...my brothers and their wives and kids and my grandparents from my mother's side are there and...

Amara: Mj we decided to study in South Africa because we love each other and we wanted to be together in peace not because your family is there

\*\*\*he brushed his head and kept quiet\*\*\*

Amara: whether we are in the UK or South Africa it shouldn't matter cause we will be together...right?

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Mj: im sorry Amara...I love you but im Studying in South Africa

\*\*\*she also got off the bed and held his hands\*\*\*

Amara: Junior please

\*\*\*she said with tears in her eyes\*\*\*

Mj: im sorry Amara....i cant

Amara: but your sister is in the UK

Mj: Amara my heart wants me to Study in South Africa and im not changing my mind im sorry

Amara: baby just think about....

\*\*\*then they heard a knock on the door and they looked at each other\*\*\*

Mj: I didn't order anything

\*\*\*they were inside one of the cheapest hotel's around....its where they meet to have sex every Saturday while during the week they just make out without sex involved behind the classrooms\*\*\*

Amara: maybe it's complementary lunch since we are regulars here

\*\*\*she said and she chuckled then Mj went to open and he quickly closed the door with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Amara: who is....

\*\*\*the door was pushed opened roughly and Amara's father walked in with his guard and Amara's eyes popped out and she started shaking\*\*\*

Amara: da...dad

Her.dad: WHAT THE HELL IS ALL THIS RUBBISH AMARA....WHAT KIND OF NONSENSE IS THIS!

\*\*\*he shouted looking angry\*\*\*

Mj: um sir im so....

\*\*\*Amara's father slapped him hard on his face that he fell on the floor and Amara screamed rushing to him\*\*\*

Her.dad: LEAVE HIM....GO TO THE CAR NOW!

Amara: dad please i...

\*\*\*she said crying and her father interrupted her\*\*\*

Her.dad: NOW!

\*\*\*he roared and she jumped with fright\*\*\*

Her.dad: I SAID OUT NOW SO I CAN DEAL WITH THIS RUBBISH BOY.....I'LL DEAL WITH YOU LATER!.....CHIDI TAKE HER TO THE CAR AND MAKE SURE SHE DOESN'T COME OUT!

\*\*\*the guard escorted her out and Mj got up rubbing his cheek with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Mj: I bruise easily sir why did you do that

\*\*\*Amara's father grabbed him with his shirt pulling him closer\*\*\*

Amara's.dad: how dare you touch my daughter you son of a pig

Mj: whoah I get you're angry but don't call my father that sir please don't

Amara's.dad: or what huh....or what....i can just kill you now and go bury your useless body in the bush somewhere or just go throw it in the evil forest and let it be eaten by wild animals

\*\*\*Mj swallowed hard\*\*\*

Mj: ummm ok I see but sir that would mean I will have to come back as a ghost and haunt you

\*\*\*Amara's father got angrier and he punched him on his face still holding him by his shirt with another hand and he screamed trying to hide his face and blood came out of his mouth\*\*\*

Amara's.father: SHUT UP YOU SON OF A WHORE.....DID YOU SCREAM LIKE A PROSTITUTE WHEN YOU WERE SLEEPING WITH MY DAUGHTER HUH?

Mj: look ok.... it was a mutual thing and no I didn't scream like a prostitute I groaned like a lion instead

\*\*\*Amara's Father then slapped him countless times with Mj hiding his face as he did.... Mj couldn't take his slaps anymore he then pushed him hard and Amara's father fell on the floor with his butt and he groaned as he hurt his tail bone and Mj quickly grabbed his things and rushed to the door then he stopped and turned to look at him with an angry look on his face\*\*\*

Mj: listen here Chief.... you haven't lost your teeth as yet because I love your daughter Amara but make no mistake of doing the shit you just did to me ever again cause I know jujitsu and taekwondo and my brother has multiple personalities....so one call to him and Mad dog will hunt you down like a dog and end you

Amara's.dad: you...you gonna pay you son of a whore...you gonna pay....im gonna make sure you get arrested and they throw away the key....ahhhhhh

\*\*\*he screamed again when he tried to move\*\*\*

Amara's. dad: you broke my back you evil bastard

Mj: and you broke my jaw man....damn for an old man you can throw a mean punch

\*\*\* he said rubbing his jaw\*\*\*

Mj: but my own punch will make you an ancestor instantly so you're damn lucky I love your beautiful daughter nx

\*\*\*then he saw Amara's father take out his phone and he ran out cause he knew he was calling his bodyguard and he hid somewhere inside the hotel and after he saw the guard running in he ran out and went to the car and found Amara crying\*\*\*

Mj: hey

\*\*\*he said sticking his head inside the car through an open window and she got alarmed when she saw his bruised up face\*\*\*

Amara: oooh my God Junior what did he do to you

\*\*\*she said touching his face crying \*\*\*

Mj: don't worry im a man I'll be fine....look... as he was beating me up I pushed him a bit hard and he fell but don't worry he's gonna be ok

Amara: what?

Mj: yeah look I have to go before they come out....i love you ok

Amara: my... my father is hurt?

\*\*\*he frowned at her and shook his head chuckling\*\*\*

Mj: bye

\*\*\*he kissed her cheek and ran away before she could say anything\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*he called his friend Kev and they met somewhere \*\*\*

Kev: damn.... ah ah bros wetin dey happen to your face?

\*\*\*Mj sighed and he told him what happened and Kevin laughed at him so hard that tears even came out of his eyes\*\*\*

Mj: mxm are you done

\*\*\*he said with a bored look on his face\*\*\*

Kev: wait...Amara dad dey do that to you....damn!

\*\*\*he continued to laugh\*\*\*

Mj: mxm you know what... I should've just called LJ instead

\*\*\*he said trying to walk away but Kev stopped him\*\*\*

Kev: ok ok im done laughing...im done....so what's wrong beside what's wrong with your face

\*\*\*he laughed a bit\*\*\*

Mj: mxm....look I know Amara's dad will call my father and tell him about this and he'll also insult him and I know I'll get a hiding of my life from my dad so I need a plan man..... Im in deep shakara Kev and the last time my dad gave me an ass whoopin I couldn't sit with my ass for a week man and I walked like a woman who's in labour

\*\*\*Kev laughed\*\*\*

Mj: and he said he's gonna get me arrested so I think he's gonna cry rape and force Amara to say I did that to her man....i can't go to jail...do you know what they do to fine boys like myself in there.... im too fine for jail man

\*\*\*he said with a worried tone\*\*\*

Kev: ok ok with the jail thing I think you should call your brothers and tell them what happened...they are your broes so they won't give you a hiding but only yell at you but they will definitely help you and with the ass whoopin ...well I have a plan

Mj: good im all ears

## .Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

\*\*\*\* AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\* La Parca looked at Ruslan who now was on his one knee and his head bowed \*\*\*

La Parca: እምም ሞትን ያታ ልላ ልይህ (you summoned me...why)

Ruslan: ብዙጊ ዜያቸን እንዲ ያሳ ልፉ እናደርጋለን ( your carrier's life is in danger)

\*\*\*La Parca looked from Saint to a terrified Mbali then he hit his scythe on the floor and Mbali fell and collapsed on the floor and he looked at Saint and he hit his scythe on the floor again and Saint turned to his original form\*\*\*

La Parca: ደንቦችን ስለ ጣሱ እና ደንቦችን (demon on your knee)

\*\*\*Saint slowly went on his knee looking at a passed out Mbali and he bowed his head\*\*\*

La Parca: ደግሞ ሞትን ያታል (who dared me)

\*\*\*Ruslan cleared his throat\*\*\*

Ruslan: የእሱ ምርጫ ሳይሆን የአባቱ ነው እናም እሱ ተጠያቂው እሱ ነው ( no one dared you great one it was just a fight that turned ugly)

\*\*\*La Parca looked at Saint\*\*\*

La Parca: ሰዓቱ ሲመጣ ጥሩ ጋኔን ይፈጥርለታል በጨለማው አለም ውስጥ በጥሩ ሁኔታ ጥቅም ላይ ይ (what are you doing outside associating yourself with human squabbles demon)

\*\*\*Saint didn't say anything his head was bend to the left a bit while he bowed his head looking at a passed out Mbali\*\*\*

La Parca: አዎ ንእርሱ ታላ ቅነ ውአዎን (im talking to you demon!)

Saint: ጊዜ ውሲመ ጣለነፍሳቸው አመጣለሁ (he hurt my carrier's mother)

La Parca: ጊዜውሲ መጣ ለነፍሳቸው አመጣለሁ ጊዜው ሲመጣ ለነፍሳቸው አመጣለሁ (isn't my carrier your carrier's father)

\*\*\*Saint didn't say anything for a bit\*\*\*

Saint: እሱ ጠን (he is)

La Parca: ሳይሆ (and?)

Saint: ያሳ ልፉ እናደ ርጋለን ብዙ ያሳልፉ እናደ (he shouldn't have touched her)

La Parca: ደንቦ ችንስ ለጣሱ እናተ ወዳጅተ ወዳጅ ከሆኑ (and you shouldn't have touched him!)

\*\*\*then he hit his scythe on the floor and Saint felt like he was being choked as he struggled to breathe\*\*\*

Ruslan: ከዚህም በተጨማሪ ንስሏ ካሌገባችሁና ሁለንም ኃጢአታቸውን ካሉት ( great one please stop you'll also kill his carrier)

\*\*\*he said with a panicking voice\*\*\*

La Parca: ንስሏ ካ ሌገባችሁ ናሁለንምኃጢ (and I care because)

Ruslan: ከዚህም በተጨማሪ ንስሏ ካሌገባችሁና ሁለንም ኃጢአታቸውን ካሌተ ከዚህም በተጨማሪ ንስሏ ካሌገባችሁና (great one please your carrier won't survive it if he wakes up and finds his son dead...please)

\*\*\*he pleaded some more and after a while La Parca let Saint be and he fell on the floor and he got up and knelt on the floor again with his head bowed and a deadly look on his face\*\*\*

La Parca: ያ ስፍራው በጣም ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን ፍርሀት ለእነሱ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታውቁ ግን በእነሱ ላይ የእርምት ሻዋዎች ላይ ቢያስቀምጡትም እንኳ አያደርጉትም እምመጤ ይህ ጥሩው አስማተኛ ጥሩ ልምምድ እንዲያስተምረው ስለዚህ ሊወለድ የነበረው የአጥንት ቅዱስ ስብዕናለመያዝ ይችላል ከዚህም በተጨማሪ ንስሏ ካሌገባችሁና ሁለንም ኃጢአታቸውን ካሌተሊከቡ (demon don't think you are indispensable and untouchable just because you're attached to a child's soul threaten my carriers life again and I'll take you to hell myself and your torture will continue from where it was left of...now don't dare me cause that boy's life means nothing to me so tread carefully)

\*\*\*he warned him and Saint didn't say anything instead he kept on looking at a passed out Mbali and La Parca hit his scythe on the floor and Saint was hit by a hard force and he fell back \*\*\*

La Parca: እመጣሆሁ (Demon!)

\*\*\*he said hitting his scythe again on the floor and the ground shook\*\*\*

Saint: ካሌገባችሁና ሁለንም ኃጢአታ (I heard you great one)

La Parca: ያ ስፍራው በጣም ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን ፍርሀት ለእነሱ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታውቁ ግን በእነሱ ላይ የእርምት ሻዋዎች ላይ ቢያስቀምጡትም እንኳ አያደርጉት (you are walking on thin ice so next time I come out because of you im taking you straight to hell and Belphegor will torture you himself for eternity)

\*\*\*Saint swallowed hard and La Parca hit his scythe on the floor and Saint went to his black smoke form and La Parca looked at Ruslan\*\*\*

La Parca: የእሱ ምርጫ ሳይሆን የአባቱ ነው እናም እሱ ተጠያቂው እሱ ነው (she's too weak to handle seeing me in my full form)

Ruslan: ጣጥጥ ጋኔን ይፈጥርለታል በጨለማው አለም ውስጥ በጥሩ ሁኔታ ጥቅም ላይ ይውላል (I'll wipe off her memory from when you showed yourself great one)

La Parca: ጠንካራ (good)



\*\*\*then he hit his scythe on the floor and strong winds filled the room and black smoke covered La Parca completely and lightning hit around the black smoke for some time then the lightning stopped and the black smoke came down to the floor and then it disappeared and Ray was now on the floor passed out and Mbali gasped as if someone just filled her lungs with air and she coughed a bit and she opened her eyes then Ruslan rushed to her\*\*\*

Ruslan: take it easy...don't get up...don't get up

\*\*\*then he touched on both side of her head with his fingers and his eyes changed colour and they became gold then he did what he had to do and she passed out again and he sighed\*\*\*

Saint: you should've let me deal with him instead of calling La Parca now I know where your loyalty lies

\*\*\*then he disappeared\*\*\*

Ruslan: shit...shit...shit

\*\*\*he picked Mbali up and took her to one of the bedrooms downstairs and he put her on the bed and covered her with a throw blanket and he went to the bathroom and wet a towel and he went to clean up her face off all the blood and he went to check on little Kalu and he was awake now...he picked him up and Kalu started crying his lungs out he took his bottle and tried to feed him but he refused it\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh cut it out Saint Kalu need to feed stop your stupid nonsense or I'll command the La Parca to come out again

\*\*\*Kalu stopped crying and he blinked and looked at Ruslan with his beautiful sapphire eyes and he smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: if it wasn't you Saint doing this I would say 'cute' but since it's you then fuck you for using a child to get to me

\*\*\*Kalu laughed with his baby laugh and Ruslan laughed too\*\*\*

Ruslan: you demon dickhead

\*\*\*Kalu laughed again and Ruslan chuckled and he went to the lounge with him in his hands and he pushed a fluffy ottoman chair next to Ray and he sat down and fed Kalu\*\*\*

Ruslan: Ray!

\*\*\*he called out to him but he didn't move\*\*\*

Ruslan: RAY WAKE UP MAN!

\*\*\*still nothing....then he shook him using his foot and he started a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: WAKE UP MAN!

\*\*\*he started again and groaned\*\*\*

Ruslan: come on wake up!

\*\*\* he opened his eyes and frowned and groaned in pain\*\*\*

Ray: shit!

\*\*\*he said with his hand on his lower back\*\*\*

Ruslan: take it easy

\*\*\*he groaned again as he tried to sit up\*\*\*

Ray: fuck!

\*\*\*he said touching his head and closing his eyes a bit when a headache hit him\*\*\*

Ruslan: I said take it easy

Ray: fuck.... what happened?

Ruslan: La Parca happened

Ray: what?

\*\*\*he said looking at Ruslan with a frown on his face he was now sitting up\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah you are still alive because of him

\*\*\*he looked around\*\*\*

Ray: Mbali...where is Mbali?

\*\*\*he said panicking \*\*\*

Ruslan: relax she's ok....she passed out and I took her to the bedroom downstairs

Ray: and Saint?

Ruslan: La Parca set him straight don't worry about him

\*\*\*then he looked at Kalu\*\*\*

Ruslan: right you demon dickhead

\*\*\*he chuckled and Kalu cried\*\*\*

Ray: cut it out man don't call my son that

Ruslan: im not calling your son that im talking to Saint

\*\*\*Ray tried to get up and Mbali's phone rang....Ruslan got up and checked who was calling and it was Jay...he let it ring\*\*\*

Ray: who's that?

\*\*\*he said getting up and he groaned when he felt a sharp pain on his back\*\*\*

Ray: fuck!

Ruslan: it's her brother Jay

Ray: I don't have strength to deal with him

\*\*\*he groaned again when he tried to walk\*\*\*

Ray: fuck.... I think that demon dickhead broke my back

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: I thought you said I shouldn't call him that

Ray: well he broke my back

Ruslan: and you hit his mother a tit for a tat ....anyway lets go to the basement La Parca needs to sleep even if it's for a few hours

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: do you think she'll leave me

Ruslan: I don't know man but what I know is once his brothers know about what you did to her the chances of this marriage working will be zero to none....we both know how the brothers feel about you especially Jay Snakes and her father

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: I didn't know about the baby man and I swear I have never slept with Celine

Ruslan: then who's the baby mama

\*\*\*Mbali's phone rang again and this time it was Snakes and they let it ring again\*\*\*

Ray: the woman I used to fuck back then was Consuelo Rodrigues

\*\*\*Ruslan raised an eyebrow at him\*\*\*

Ray: she's Celine's cousin

Ruslan: Amen!

\*\*\*he said shaking his head\*\*\*

Ray: she's also the woman I cheated on Mbali with on the early stages of our relationship but she never told me about no baby so....

\*\*\*he groaned with pain and Ruu shook his head and he got up\*\*\*

Ruslan: let's go to the basement like I said La Parca need to rest even if it's just for a few hours

\*\*\*he walked away disappointed at Ray and Mbali's phone rang again Ray looked at who's calling and he clicked his tongue and walked away following Ruslan feeling like shit\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\* NIGERIA\*\*\*\*

Kev: do a fake suicide attempt

\*\*\*Mj frowned at him\*\*\*

Mj: nawa oh! ah ah this boy.... you dey craze....are you mad

\*\*\*Kev chuckled\*\*\*

Kev: relax ok I said FAKE suicide attempt....FAKE

Mj: abeg fake or not suicide is suicide man....do I look like someone who would kill himself or attempt to

Kev: do you want my help or not

Mj: look man don't let the devil use you I said FAKE suicide attempt....FAKE

Mj: abeg fake or not suicide is suicide man....do I look like someone who would kill himself or attempt to

Kev: do you want my help or not

Mj: look man don't let the devil use you don't let it use you to make me commit suicide man

\*\*\*Kev sighed shaking his head\*\*\*

Kev: can you get serious just once in your life man

Mj: im dead serious man....im too fine to associate myself with suicide man....and what if I die for real man

Kev: dude come on

\*\*\*Mj shook his head\*\*\*

Mj: you no dey hear word man..... God and satan are busy fighting over me and now you want me to give the devil the upper hand no man no

\*\*\*Kev laughed shaking his head\*\*\*

Kev: fine but listen to my plan first before you dismiss it

Mj: fine im listening

Kev: ok fine....you drink three sleeping pills and stage the scene by scattering a few pills on your side drawer and go empty the container and put it on the side drawer along with an empty glass of water and you'll thank me later

\*\*\*Mj gave him a "wtf" look\*\*\*

Mj: are you high man?

Kev: trust me man it will work and your dad won't do anything to you and your brothers will get more angry at chief for threatening you and they'll blame him for it

\*\*\*Mj kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Kev: it will work man

Mj: how do you know huh....what if I don't wake up

Kev: well I did....it's only three sleeping pills man

Mj: you no be God Kevin what if this is the only way the devil will get me huh

Kev: look this plan once worked for me and I got away with crashing dad's brand new Benz after I took it without his permission and went on a date with that high fly girl I once told you about and on my way back I crashed it

Mj: what? why don't I know about this man

Kev: my dad said I shouldn't tell anyone about it especially about me trying to "commit suicide"....imagine chief Peters son in hospital for a suicide attempt

Mj: damn

Kev: mmmmh and I got no ass whoopin nothing bros....all I got was being yelled at my mom and dad about how suicide is not an answer and that my life is more important than a car

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Mj: you sneaky little bastard

\*\*\*they laughed again\*\*\*

Kev: so that's my plan man

Mj: fine but if something goes wrong and I die know that I'll come back as a ghost and haunt you until you kill yourself too

\*\*\*Kev laughed\*\*\*

Kev: relax nothing will happen to you

.

.

.

\*\*\*\* AT THE MALL \*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Kazi was walking around inside a boutique shopping for new clothes....she lost a bit of weight so her clothes were a bit loose so after a lot of convincing Mazwi let her come to the mall but with some guards ofcourse since he had a meeting to go to..... She saw a nice summer dress and she put it inside the basket she was carrying and she continued to look then on the corner of her eye she saw some guy looking at her and she moved to another row of clothes cause his stare made her feel some tupa way and she searched for more clothes to buy...

Then she saw the guy on the corner of her eye again and he was staring then she looked around for her two guards and they were by the door and she sighed and when she attempted to move he was standing right in front of her and she freaked out a bit \*\*\*

Man: relax I mean no harm

\*\*\*he said in a calm manner and the guards quickly moved to her and grabbed the man and the man chuckled\*\*\*

Guard1: are you ok mam.....is he giving you trouble?

Kazi: ummm

\*\*\*she said looking at the guy and his face seemed familiar \*\*\*

Man: I just wanted to say hi that's all...like I said I mean no harm

Guard2: shut up!

Kazi: ummm its ok....let...let him go guys

Guard1: are you sure?

\*\*\*Kazi nodded and they let him go\*\*\*

Guard2: don't try anything funny or you'll regret it

Man: mmmmh noted

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head then the guard went to stand not far from them\*\*\*

Man: hi

Kazi: hey ummm...im sorry about that..... ummm you look familiar especially your eyes do I know you from somewhere

Man: yeah we met inside an elevator at Summer Glaze hotel and you almost fell but I caught you before you could remember

\*\*\*she frowned then her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Kazi: the guy with cold hands and creepy eyes....yeah I remember you

\*\*\* the man laughed a beautiful laugh while Kazi just smiled\*\*\*

Man: the name is Castiel by the way....Cass for short



\*\*\*he said stretching his hand out for a handshake and Kazi shook his hand and she frowned looking at their hands\*\*\*

Kazi: im Ntandokazi...Kazi for short...damn your hand is cold

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled and he pulled his hand back and put both his hands inside his pockets\*\*\*

Castiel: I get that a lot

Kazi: is it a condition or...

Castiel: ngilala ngingunu that's why ( I sleep naked that's why)

\*\*\*Kazi's eyes popped out and Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: you didn't just say that

\*\*\*Castiel laughed again\*\*\*

Castiel: ngiya dlala man ( im kidding man) it's some sort of a..... condition

\*\*\*she chuckled shaking her head\*\*\*

Castiel: you good

Kazi: mmmmh why?

Castiel: ummm guards

\*\*\*he said pointing at the guards and she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: I was kidnapped weeks back so my boyfriend is just being careful...well too careful I must say

\*\*\*Castiel clenched his jaws looking down then he faked a smile looking at her\*\*\*

Castiel: a boyfriend huh?

Kazi: yep

\*\*\*then her phone rang\*\*\*

Kazi: speak of the devil

\*\*\*she then answered it\*\*\*

Kazi: hey

Menzi: who the hell is that Ntandokazi?

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: someone I know

Menzi: someone you know....Kazi have you forgotten that you were kidnapped weeks back why haven't I heard about this guy since we met

\*\*\*she sighed again\*\*\*

Kazi: Menzi relax will you I have guards with me and this guy once ummm helped me so im sure he means no harm

Menzi: I don't care if he once took a bullet for you I don't know him so he's a threat....entlek what is that fool's name

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes and Castiel chuckled he could hear the conversation between them since he has super hearing abilities\*\*\*

Kazi: his name is Castiel Menzi now can you stop

Menzi: I won't stop cause your safety is my priority Ntandokazi

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: ok Mapholoba I hear you let me finish up with my shopping and I'll go home how's that?

Menzi: good that's what I want to hear...I love you ok

Kazi: I know shap

\*\*\*Menzi chuckled\*\*\*

Menzi: ngithe ngiyakuthanda Ntandokazi ( I said I love you Ntandokazi)

Kazi: ey bhuti you are still in mourning so ngiyeke tuu(so let me be please)

\*\*\*Menzi laughed\*\*\*

Menzi: shap I'll get you

Kazi: bye

\*\*\*she ended the call and breathed out\*\*\*

Kazi: sorry about that

Castiel: mmmmh I should get going... I guess I'll see you around

Kazi: ummm yeah sure

\*\*\*he walked away looking angry and he gave the guards deadly looks as he walked passed them\*\*\*

\*\*\*OUTSIDE THE SHOP\*\*\*

Castiel: shit!...she can't be falling for that son of a bitch...she cant!

\*\*\*then he took out his phone and dialed Ruslan's numbers\*\*\*

Ruslan: Cass

Castiel: look im on my way to Pretoria I need to talk to you about something so I need a place to crash im not hundred percent ok so staying in a hotel is a no no

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: fine you can stay at a house I bought for Thandi and the boys its being renovated

Castiel: ok thanks bro.... wait are you ok you sound a bit off

Ruslan: Ray and his wife fought and La Parca and Saint came out so you can imagine what happened

Castiel: oooh shit.... ummm ok im on my way ok

Ruslan: ok

\*\*\*then they ended the call and he sighed he wondered what triggered La Parca to come out\*\*\*

Woman: hi

\*\*\*Castiel turned and he frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: yeah what is it?

Woman: ummm are you Josh

Castiel: do I look like a Josh to you

\*\*\*he said with a straight face and she chuckled nervously\*\*\*

Woman: umm no actually I hoped you were a Josh so I won't look this embarrassed in front of such a handsome guy...im Nelly by the way

Castiel: and im not interested

\*\*\*he walked away leaving the lady with her mouth hanging\*\*\*

Nelly: mxm you're too tall for me anyway sdididi( fool) nx

\*\*\*she walked away sulking\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*NIGERIA....AT THE OWOH-MASDEN RESIDENCE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\* it's been two hours since Mj drank those sleeping pills and they have already knocked him out and everything else was done the way Kev said right now Patience (his step mother)

was back from her woman's league meeting and she was busy calling him she wanted to ask him what she should cook for dinner tonight . She always asks him cause he likes her food and she has gotten used to him telling or rather asking nicely that she should cook what he's craving for that night so she was calling him for that but he didn't respond and it wasn't like him to keep quiet when he's being called....she knew he was back from "seeing his friends" cause the house help confirmed that he's back..... she called him a couple of times but there was no response so she went upstairs to his room to check on him....she knocked on his door but there was no response from Mj again and she started getting worried\*\*\*

Patience: Junior!

\*\*\*still nothing\*\*\*

Patience: fine then im coming in

\*\*\*she opened the door and saw that he was lying on the bed sleeping\*\*\*

Patience: Junior!

\*\*\*she walked closer to the bed and she looked by the bed side drawer and saw the empty container and her heart started beating fast\*\*\*

Patience: Junior...Junior

\*\*\*she said shaking him but he didn't respond and she put her hands on top of her head\*\*\*

Patience: ooh God what has this boy done

\*\*\*she shook him again and roughly this time\*\*\*

Patience: Junior...Junior don't do this to me ooo

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice and he still didn't move and tears ran down her face\*\*\*

Patience: Junior wake up...what have you done....wake up please my boy don't do this to me

\*\*\*She said crying and still he didn't move then she quickly took out her phone and she called for an ambulance after that she called her husband\*\*\*

Michael Senior: my love you wont believe what that boy Junior did.... I swear today im going to kill him with my bare hands

\*\*\* he said with an angry voice and Patience cried\*\*\*

Michael Senior: honey what's wrong...why are you crying...did that bastard call you too

Patience: it's Junior he...he....he's not moving Michael I think he overdosed on pills

Michael Senior: WHAT!

Patience: an ambulance is on its way... get here now Michael

\*\*\*then she dropped the call and she sat on the edge of the bed and pulled his upper body up and she held him crying then she heard what sounded like a snore....she stopped crying and looked at him but he was still passed out cold \*\*\*

Patience: Junior...my boy...wake up....wake please

\*\*\*she said slapping him gently on his cheek then..... Mj Snored again and louder this time and she froze and frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Patience: Junior

\*\*\*he continued to snore\*\*\*

Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

INSERT 12

.

.

.

\*\*\* The door opened and Snakes Jay and Jase walked in and they found Ruslan laying on the couch with his eyes closed and on his back with a wet cloth on his forehead\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't make noise Kalu is asleep

Snakes: how did you....you know what never mind.....where is Mbali?

Ruslan: sleeping on the bedroom downstairs

\*\*\*Snakes and Jay rushed there while Jase stood there looking at Ruslan\*\*\*

Ruslan: you've got something on your mind Khumalo?

Jase: what happened?

Ruslan: with what?

Jase: you know what im talking about....what happened?

Snakes: yeah answer him mthakathi what happened to Mbali....why isn't she waking up and what happened to her face

\*\*\*he asked with an angry look on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: well she was having a normal couple's argument with her husband when Saint the original one woke up and attacked his father because of mommy....shit happened and he came out on his full form and I had to protect Ray....Mbali fainted and I summoned La Parca....

Snakes: what?

\*\*\*He asked with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Ruslan: then La Parca put Saint in his place and that's about it....Mbali will wake up soon and Ray is in the basement inside a coffin putting La Parca to sleep

Them: a what?

Ruslan: mmmmh that's how La Parca goes to sleep..... you know ya'll give the guy a hard time not knowing what he has to go through to put La Parca to sleep....what he went through to put La Parca to sleep that time he went to save your sister

\*\*\*The Khumalo's kept quiet and sat down\*\*\*

Jay: what I want to know is what happened to Mbali's face...qa

Ruslan: well you can ask her what happened to it when she wakes up.....look I have a bad headache so wait for the Owoh-Masdens to wake up and you can question them

Jay: how can you say that....La Parca and Saint woke up and our sister was there so don't tell us shit

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Jase: Nkosenye yehlisa umoya man (Nkosenye calm down man)

Jay: ungazontshela ukuthi ( don't tell me that) I should calm down.... Mbalenhle was in front of those things and....

Ruslan: careful man the original Saint is restless and La Parca is not yet asleep so they can see you and also hear you

\*\*\*Ruslan interrupted him\*\*\*

Snakes: w...what?

\*\*\*He asked looking around alarmed by what Ruslan just said\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah

\*\*\*all this time he was laying there with his eyes closed\*\*\*

-----

AT A HOUSE RUSLAN RENTED FOR THANDI AND THE BOYS

\*\*\*Thandi woke up from her sleep disturbed by her ringing phone\*\*\*

Thandi: hello

\*\*\*She said with a sleepy voice\*\*\*

Voice: hey Thandi its Jackson....James' brother

\*\*\*Thandi frowned and she sat up straight\*\*\*



Thandi: why are you calling me Jackson?

Jackson: can we meet up...I need to talk to you about something important

Thandi: you can tell me over the phone mos.... we don't have to meet

\*\*\*she said with an annoyed tone\*\*\*

Jackson: please Thandi

Thandi: well I can't meet up with you especially after what you and your family did and said to me

Jackson: look im sorry about that.... I also want to apologize for that

Thandi: bona mo Jackson .... i have a headache and I don't have time for your nonsense.....it's either you say what you want to say now or I'll drop the call

\*\*\*Jackson sighed\*\*\*

Jackson: fine then tell me where you are and I'll come to you since you're not feeling well

Thandi: that won't be necessary just talk so I can go back to sleep motho wa batho

\*\*\*Jackson sighed\*\*\*

Jackson: now I understand why James used to say you're stubborn as hell

\*\*\*He then chuckled but Thandi just kept quiet\*\*\*

Jackson: ok look I just wanted to tell you that I have a way that will make the family to change their mind about disowning you and the boys

Thandi: askies?

Jackson: yeah so now can we meet so I can tell you all about my plan

\*\*\*Thandi kept quiet a bit....she didn't care about them hating her and banning her from ever entering the Mashaba household but she was worried about her sons....one day they gonna have children and those children might need to be introduced to the Mashaba ancestors and since they are disowned that won't happen....she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: why would you do that for me and the boys and don't say you care because you don't

Jackson: I actually do Thandi

Thandi: ooh please stop lying Jackson ok

Jackson: look I do care.... sometimes family can make you do things you don't want do and you end up doing them cause you don't wanna lose them

\*\*\*she kept quiet\*\*\*

Jackson: look I feel bad about what happened and I wanna help

\*\*\*she continued to keep quiet then she spoke\*\*\*

Thandi: fine I'll get back to you about when and where we should meet

Jackson: I was actually thinking about today since im around Pta

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: I'll call you back let me think about it first

\*\*\*she then dropped the call and sighed then she dialed Ruslan's numbers..... she didn't want to seem like she's ungrateful and she also didn't want to do things behind his back cause she tasted what real love and being worshiped by your man feels like and she doesn't wanna do anything stupid that might make her lose Ruslan...Anyway Ruslan took out his phone as it was ringing and he opened his eyes to see who was calling and he sat up and stood up answering the phone\*\*\*

Ruslan: amour

\*\*\*He said walking away\*\*\*

Thandi: hey

Ruslan: hey.....is everything ok you sound down

\*\*\*Thandi sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: I was asleep maybe that's why I sound down

Ruslan: ok but I can tell something is on your mind....talk to me

\*\*\*she sighed again\*\*\*

Ruslan: what is it amour....is it the boys or the ba...

\*\*\*he stopped talking and he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Ruslan: what's wrong?

Thandi: I got a call from Jackson....James elder brother

\*\*\*Ruslan kept quiet for a bit with a frown on his face and clenched jaws\*\*\*

Thandi: babe...Ruu did you hear me?

Ruslan: yeah.....what did he want?

Thandi: to talk....

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: to talk about Mpendulo and Mpilo

Ruslan: go on

Thandi: he said he has a way he can make his family to change their minds about Mpilo and Mpendulo

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: I hope you told him to go to hell

\*\*\*She kept quiet\*\*\*

Ruslan: Thandi?

Thandi: i...I told him I'll get back to him

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: are you fucken kidding me

\*\*\*He said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Thandi: Ruu im thinking of Mpe and Mpilo's future....what if when they grow up and have kids of their own then it comes a time when the kids will need to be introduced to their ancestors

Ruslan: didn't I say I got this and that family will change their minds whether its by force or willingly!

\*\*\*she kept quiet\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't you trust me now Thandi

Thandi: I do Ruu im just scared

Ruslan: if you trust me then why don't you let me handle this then huh

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: I trust you Ruu im....

Ruslan: well it doesn't seem like that from where im standing

Thandi: Ruu

Ruslan: you know what the boys are yours Thandi so do what you think is right for them.... i have to go

\*\*\*Then he dropped the call and he almost threw his phone against the wall but he stopped himself....Meanwhile Thandi couldn't believe Ruslan dropped the call on her tears welled her eyes and they ran down her cheeks with her bottom lip trembling..... She laid down again and she hugged her pillow as she sobbed silently after sometime she calmed down and she dialed Jackson' numbers\*\*\*

Jackson: wow that was quick

Thandi: look Jackson I thought about it and im not interested in whatever plan you have.....you and your family insulted me and my family and disowned my sons...your own nephews because I stood up to you all so take your stupid plan and shove it down your ass and fucken never call me again nxa

\*\*\*then she dropped the call and she even blocked his numbers and she lay there feeling sad and hurt by Ruslan's reaction\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Ruslan called Castiel's numbers and he answered the call on the third ring\*\*\*

Cass: Madou

Ruslan: have you arrived yet

Cass: a hi Cass....how are you and how was your trip would have been nice

Ruslan: not now Cass im not in the mood

\*\*\*he said with a cold tone\*\*\*

Cass: ok when Madou is not in the mood then someone provoked him.....give me his name and I'll deal with him

Ruslan: no this one is mine to deal with so have you arrived?

Cass: yeah and you have a nice crib here

Ruslan: ok now I need you to bring me something from there

Cass: ok what?

Ruslan: my crystal ball....its in the study and the door is locked by a protection spell

Cass: ummm ohk..... so where should I bring it?

Ruslan: Ray's house I'll send you the gps coordinates

Cass: ok cool

Ruslan: its inside its bag and when you get here behave...the Khumalo's are here

Cass: ok why are you telling me to behave... those Khumalo shitheads means shit to me

Ruslan: cause im sure some of them will piss you off like they do to me and I don't want drama I have a headache

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Cass: ok bro I'll see you when I get there

Ruslan: cool

\*\*\*they ended the call and Ruslan sighed then he dialed Thandi's numbers and she answered on the fourth ring\*\*\*

Thandi: hey

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: im sorry

\*\*\*she kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: im sorry I overreacted amour.... im just pissed off that you're entertaining that family even after all the shit they put you through

Thandi: I called him back and basically told him to fuck off

\*\*\*Ruslan kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: you did?

Thandi: yeah.... I don't know what I was even thinking...im sure whatever plan he has I won't like it and it might even make us fight and i....

Ruslan: I love you amour.... a lot and believe me when I say that those people will come and beg you to forgive them..... I don't want you to stress in anyway just focus on our boys

\*\*\* "and girl" he thought\*\*\*

Ruslan: and let me handle everything else please

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: and thank you for letting me know about the call....im sorry I overreacted ok

Thandi: ok im sorry too for almost considering meeting up with him

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed and he smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: now you make me wanna come there and eat that pussy up

Thandi: Ruu!

\*\*\*he could tell she was blushing and he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: what?

Thandi: you know what let me get back to my beauty sleep bye

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: wait....Te amo amour

Thandi: Te amo too

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: what....i know what Te amo means from one of Rihanna's songs but I don't know what too means in ....its Spanish right?

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah....i'll see you tomorrow ok and I want you to meet my brother...he's in town so its better I introduce you two than to have him introduce himself

\*\*\*she laughed a bit\*\*\*

Thandi: so you two are good now

Ruslan: well my blood doesn't boil anymore whenever I even think of him so....

\*\*\*Thandi laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: mmmmh

Ruslan: ok go back to sleep....i love you

Thandi: I love you too...bye

\*\*\*They ended the call and Ruslan sighed and he smiled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: damn I scored myself a gem with her

\*\*\*then he went back to the lounge\*\*\*

-----

NIGERIA

Patience: JUNIOR!

\*\*\* She said shaking him roughly and he moved\*\*\*

Mj: mmmmh

Patience: I can't believe this....Junior wake up!

\*\*\*He moved again\*\*\*

Mj: mh mh leave me alone

\*\*\*he said moving from her turning to look away with his head on the pillow now\*\*\*

Patience: mxm this stupid boy

\*\*\*then she slapped his head and he groaned and he turned his head again\*\*\*

Patience: WAKE UP!

\*\*\*he groaned and opened his eyes slowly then he scanned his surrounding with his eyes squinted and they landed on an angry looking Patience then his heart started beating fast and he faked a cough a bit but Patience didn't move\*\*\*

Mj: am I in heaven

\*\*\*Patience continued to look at Mj with that angry look\*\*\*



Mj: are you an angel...am I in heaven?

Patience: SHUT UP AND SIT UP NOW!

\*\*\*she said pulling him up and he faked being in pain and he screamed out loud\*\*\*

Patience: what is it...what's wrong?

\*\*\*she said worried now\*\*\*

Mj: p...pain

Patience: where?

\*\*\*He pointed on his stomach and he screamed again\*\*\*

Patience: ok baby lie down...lie down

\*\*\*She said helping him to lie down slowly\*\*\*

Patience: let me tell the driver to come and help me take you to the hospital ok

\*\*\*She said already calling the driver forgetting that she already called an ambulance and Mj sighed relieved....After Patience's call he groaned totally faking being in pain and Patience Quickly held him brushing his belly panicking\*\*\*

Patience: its ok baby...its ok...im here all will be well

\*\*\*tears ran down Mj's face cause he was feeling like shit for worrying Patience cause she was genuinely worried about him and he was faking it all.....then the door opened and the house help walked in\*\*\*

Helper: madam the ambulance people are here and they say somebody called them from this house ooo....ooh my God Junior is he ok

Patience: TELL THEM TO COME IN HERE NOW!

Helper: ok sorry ooo...

\*\*\*she rushed out and seconds later the paramedics pushed the stretcher in and Patience told them what's wrong with Mj then they put him on the stretcher and pushed him out with Patience running behind them\*\*\*

## AT THE HOSPITAL

\*\*\*Patience got up when she saw her husband rushing towards her and they hugged tightly and she sobbed\*\*\*

MJ.Senior: what happened?

Patience: I don't know...I came home from my shop and I called out to him and when he didn't answer I went to his room then I found an empty container of pills and some scattered on top of the bed and he wasn't moving and when he woke up he was crying saying he's feeling pain inside his stomach....i...I think he was trying to commit suicide but failed

Mj.Senior: I can't believe this

\*\*\*He said sitting down\*\*\*

Patience: I thought...i thought...

\*\*\* he got up and held her tight\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: its ok....he's gonna be ok....he's gonna be ok

\*\*\*they sat down and Mr Owoh-Masden called Ray but his phone send him to voicemail then he called Heath and told him about Mj's attempted suicide and the call he received concerning what Mj did then Heath told him he'll tell Ray and Jabu and he'll catch the next available flight and after their call they waited for the doctor....

Soon a doctor came to them and greeted them\*\*\*

Doctor: sir...madam

\*\*\*He shook their hands\*\*\*

Patience: how is he doctor?

Doctor: he's gonna be fine...we didn't find high dosage of pills in his system so he'll be fine....we did run some tests and we waiting for the result but im sure they'll also come back saying he's fine

\*\*\* Mr and Mrs Owoh-Masden sighed with relief\*\*\*

Patience: are you sure doctor?

Doc: im sure Mrs Owoh Masden he's gonna be just fine.... but I'll keep him here for the night just for observation for the stomach cramps

\*\*\* they nodded and Mj's father sighed\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: thank you doctor

\*\*\*he said shaking his hand\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: can we see him?

\*\*\*the doctor nodded\*\*\*

Doctor: ofcourse Chief....right this way

\*\*\*they followed him\*\*\*

-----

## AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\* Mbali opened her eyes and she scanned around the room and she noticed that it was one of the bedrooms downstairs then she sat up and held her head and closed her eyes for a bit and she opened them and sighed as she remembered her fight with Ray and Saint attacking him then it all goes blank from then on....she can't remember anything else that happened after that....she sighed again then she got out of bed and went out of the room and she heard voices in the lounge and the voices sounded familiar....she went there and found her brothers there with Ruslan laying on the couch on his back with a wet cloth on his

forehead....they turned and saw her and they quickly got up and went to her and they hugged her\*\*\*

Snakes: are you ok?

\*\*\*she nodded while biting her lower lip....she was trying by all means not to cry\*\*\*

Jase: kwenzakaleni Mbali? (What happened Mbali?).... uMelusi called us sounding distressed astshela ukuthi (and he said) we should check up on you that all is not well

\*\*\*She swallowed hard and looked down\*\*\*

Mbali: im ok bhuti....Ray and I had an argument and Saint involved himself

Snakes: uthi you are ok...bheka ubuso bakho Mbali that all is not well

\*\*\*She swallowed hard and looked down\*\*\*

Mbali: im ok bhuti....Ray and I had an argument and Saint involved himself

Snakes: uthi you are ok...bheka ubuso bakho Mbali ingathi idemoni lakfahlaza ngempama ( look at your face Mbali its as if a demon slapped you)

\*\*\*he said with a pissed off tone and Mbali sighed and she looked at Ruslan\*\*\*

Mbali: Ruu where is Kalu

Ruslan: sleeping inside his cot and I must add that all this noise will wake him up and he's not in a good mood today

Mbali: ummm and....and Ray?

Ruslan: he went to calm himself and La Parca down

\*\*\*She swallowed hard and sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: ok....ummm thanks for....for looking after Kalu

Ruslan: no sweat

\*\*\*He said still with his eyes closed \*\*\*

Snakes: what the hell happened Mbali?

Mbali: didn't Ruu fill you in khanti

\*\*\*she said moving to where her son was and he was still sleeping....she bit her lower lip looking at him and her eyes got filled with tears but she fought them back then she went to the kitchen and she took out bottled water and drank...Anyway in the lounge the Khumalo brothers got up and followed Mbali then Ruslan's phone rang\*\*\*

Ruslan: Ezeudo

Heath: bros how far? ( hey)

Ruslan: I dey fine Ezeh ( im fine Ezeh)

Heath: good...look im trying to call big Ray and his numbers aren't going through so I thought I should call you first before I call his flower

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: well Saint and La Parca woke up and shit happened so he's going to put him back to sleep

Heath: WHAT?

Ruslan: relax he's fine in fact everyone is fine

\*\*\*Heath sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: look he's fine so relax

Heath: shit....ummm ok when he's back tell him to call me

Ruslan: ok I'll tell him

Heath: and Ruslan tell him Mj was caught with some chief's daughter in a motel and he managed to run away but when he got home he attempted to commit suicide

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Heath: ah ah this guy....this no be a laughing matter ooo ( this is not a laughing matter)

Ruslan: well it is cause the Mj I know would never try to kill himself

Heath: look I know that but he's scared man cause the chief said Mj forced himself on his daughter

Ruslan: shit!

Heath: yeah so maybe he did it out of fear

\*\*\*Ruslan kept quiet for a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: nah....that crazy boy once tried to kill that ex of yours that almost killed Naledi and killed your son and he know his brothers will do anything for him or to save him and even if the old man was gonna give him an ass whoopin but its better than going to jail so attempted suicide nah....not MJ

\*\*\*Heath kept quiet for a bit\*\*\*

Heath: that little piece of shit

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's definitely an Owoh-Masden

\*\*\*he laughed again\*\*\*

Heath: I swear when I get there im gonna personally whip his black ass

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: well I must say im impressed that boy has a sharp mind and even though ya'll are not aware but he's learning from ya'll especially Jabu.... he always got an ace up his sleeves....he shot that girl and he went about his business as if it wasn't him and if Jabu's guy didn't call believe me none of ya'll wouldn't know that it was him

\*\*\*Heath sighed worried\*\*\*

Heath: I don't want him to live the life we're living man

Ruslan: that boy has a little Ray and a little bit of you and Jabu in him so you need to watch him closely....he's learning from ya'll without your knowledge

Heath: nx i swear this boy is gonna give me grey hair and he's not even my son

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled and Heath sighed\*\*\*

Heath: let me get going.... tell big Ray to call me when he's back

Ruslan: yeah I will and take it easy on him....he's an Owoh-Masden after all

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed and they ended the call\*\*\*

## IN THE KITCHEN

Jay: Mbali

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: bhuti

Jay: what the hell is going and ungazostshela ngo Ruslan cause sbuza wena ( and don't tell us about Ruslan cause we're asking you)

Mbali: like I said bhuti....Ray and I had an argument and Saint came out and attacked him

Snakes: then what the hell happened to your face

Jay: yeah what the hell happened and don't you dare lie to us

\*\*\*she swallowed and looked away trying to find a suitable lie to tell them\*\*\*

Ruslan: like I told ya'll shit happened....Saint got angry and it was windy and shit everywhere and she tried to stop him but he was mad angry and she got caught in the cross fire

\*\*\*he said standing by the kitchen entrance with the wet cloth on his hand\*\*\*

Jay: I didn't ask you I asked her now stay out of this

Ruslan: well im telling you.... you know...

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: your sister here saw a demon face to face for the first time ever and that demon is attached to her son's soul....even though the demon attacked her husband but she cant hate it cause its part of her son....she's traumatized stressed hurt angry and conflicted but ya'll don't give a damn about that right

\*\*\*The Khumalo's kept quiet and Mbali looked down and Ruslan just shook his head looking at the brothers\*\*\*

Ruslan: some brothers you are mxm

\*\*\*Then he turned to walk away when a doorbell rang and he went to open cause he could tell it was Castiel\*\*\*

Snakes: mthakathi is right....im sorry my princess

\*\*\*Mbali's eyes got filled with tears and when Snakes hugged her she just let it all out\*\*\*

## IN THE LOUNGE

Castiel: this is a nice crib damn

\*\*\*he said looking around\*\*\*

Ruslan: and how did you get inside the yard cause you didn't call to tell me to open the gate for you

Castiel: what kind of a stupid question is that....im a vampire man

Jay: you're a what?

\*\*\*he said with a shocked face and Castiel looked at him\*\*\*

Castiel: I said a vampire

Ruslan: CASTIEL!

\*\*\*he warned him\*\*\*



Castiel: what...what did I do?

\*\*\*he said looking at Ruslan who was giving him a deadly look\*\*\*

Jay: he's kidding right

\*\*\*he asked Ruslan\*\*\*

Castiel: and why would I be kidding beast....im not ashamed of what I am

\*\*\*Ruslan just shook his head and he walked to the couches with the bag Castiel brought for him and he sat down\*\*\*

Jay: you a Vamp...pire?

\*\*\*Castiel opened his mouth and his eyes changed colour and his fangs grew longer\*\*\*

Castiel: see

\*\*\*he said showing him\*\*\*

Jay: the fuck!

\*\*\*he said moving back and Castiel's eyes and fangs went back to normal and he laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: pussy....i mean you have a beast but you're shocked to see a vampire..... Madou im disappointed man

\*\*\*he shook his head and went to sit down\*\*\*

Ruslan: if you're disappointed about his reaction then you should imagine how im feeling about your little drama you just pulled now

Castiel: mxm kill joy

Jay: Ruslan who the fuck is this and what the hell is he doing here

Castiel: im his elder brother Castiel....don't mind him looking older than me I stopped aging at age 33 and he ages slowly he's actually sixt....

Ruslan: CASTIEL!

\*\*\*He gave him a stern look to warn him to shut up and he quickly did\*\*\*

Castiel: oooh it's a.....damn ok

\*\*\*he kept quiet and started whistling as he sat back\*\*\*

Ruslan: you're a pain in the butt you know that

Castiel: you mean a good pain in the butt right

\*\*\*Ruslan showed him the "fuck you" sign and Castiel laughed while Jay stood there still shocked\*\*\*

Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

INSERT.....13

.  
. .  
. .

NIGERIA

\*\*\* Patience ran to Mj and she kissed his forehead\*\*\*

Patience: thanks God you're ok baby

Mj: im glad too mom

\*\*\*he said with a low voice and Patience smiled widely\*\*\*

Mj: im...im sorry for trying to kill myself....i was just scared

Mj.Senior: scared of what!

\*\*\*he said with a pissed off tone\*\*\*

Patience: my love don't please

Mj.Senior: no Patience he should tell us why he was scared

Mj: "shit"

\*\*\*he thought\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: we are waiting Junior!

Mj: ummm....ummm I met...met up with some chick....i mean girl in a motel and ummmm.... then we messed around a bit then his father walked in with his big goon bodyguard and they beat me up and he threatened me and called Nomvula names and he even insulted me so I pushed him hard and he fell on the floor and I ran away cause he was even threatening to kill me and he kept on saying I raped his daughter so when I got home i....i got scared and drank some pills

Mj.Senior: where did you even get the pills

Mj: "shit"

\*\*\*he thought....he knew he can't say they are Patience's cause when they get home she will find her pills\*\*\*

MJ: ummm they...they were Nomvula's

\*\*\*he said with a low tone\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: I give up with you Mj

Patience: my husband please don't....don't say that

Mj.Senior: what should I say then Patience I was insulted because of this boy's reckless behavior and now that piece of shit will blackmail me into doing what he wants just because he knows I'll never allow my son to go to jail

Mj: he can't do that dad

Mj.Senior: he can and I know he will.....see your life now Mj....see how your reckless behavior is going to cost me now heh....you see now!

\*\*\*Mj swallowed hard as his father was shouting at him\*\*\*

Mj: then I should have died

Patience: shut up....how can you say that

Mj: what else can I say mom....first of all I know I messed up but I didn't force myself on that girl and secondly im a horny teenager and peer pressure is around me all the time and that girl just threw herself at me and....

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit cause he was now raising his voice and he knows never to raise his voice while talking to his father\*\*\*

Mj: im sorry

\*\*\*he said looking down\*\*\*

Mj: she's the one that suggested we meet somewhere private before we even started dating and I agreed cause im a teenager and ...

Mj.Senior: we know you're a horny teenager!

\*\*\*he snapped at him and Patience gave him a disapproving look\*\*\*

Mj: look dad when he found us we were sitting on the edge of the bed talking about next year....i wanted us to go study in South Africa but her parents are against it they want her to study in the UK and she was trying to convince me to go with her but I told her I couldn't....i didn't force myself on her and I'll even get testimonies from all the guys she slept with it's not even the first time she met a guy at a hotel or motel

Patience: if so then why did you even follow her to a hotel Junior?

Mj: cause im a teenager and she's a beautiful girl with a beautiful body and....

Mj.Senior: shut up!

\*\*\*Mj kept quiet\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: you're a disgrace Junior.... I have overlooked every shit you did in the past but...

\*\*\*Patience interrupted him\*\*\*

Patience: Michael don't....your son tried to kill himself because he was scared if he didn't care he would have looked you in the eye and lied but he's here in hospital apologizing

\*\*\*Mr Owoh-Masden kept quiet\*\*\*

Patience: and that stupid chief if he doesn't wants to deal with me then he better not come after you or my son and you'll not say words to you son you can't take back because of that useless piece of thing called chief what what

Mj: yes mom tell him

\*\*\*Patience looked at him with a scary frown on her face\*\*\*

Mj: tell him what....did I say you should talk!

\*\*\*Mj swallowed hard\*\*\*

Mj: I just...

Patience: quiet!

\*\*\*Mj kept quiet and he looked at his dad\*\*\*

Patience: and you young man this has better be the last time you try to kill yourself or I'll personally wake you up and kill you myself you hear me

\*\*\*Mj nodded looking scared and Mr Owoh-Masden was just shocked by this side of Patience he's never seen before\*\*\*

Patience: and if you ever I mean ever do things that will make my husband question his parenting skills Junior you'll regret it you hear me!

\*\*\*Mj nodded quickly\*\*\*

Patience: look I understand that you are still young and you're gonna make mistakes as you grow up but baby make sure you never do things that might catch up with you in the future and ruin things for you hear me

Mj: yes mam

Patience: good

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Patience: now rest I'll come back during night visiting hour and I'll bring you toiletries and pyjamas ok

Mj: yes mam

Patience: good

\*\*\*she kissed his forehead and walked out then it was silence\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: ok what just happened?

Mj: your wife has a scary side and I swear I'll never do anything to piss her off

\*\*\*his father laughed\*\*\*

Mj: im sorry dad I know I messed up but I swear I didn't force myself on that girl

\*\*\*his father didn't say anything\*\*\*

Mj: you know I once dated chief Okwonko's daughter Mercy and i had a talk with someone about it and she made me realize that if she's not worth me fighting with my family or losing them then she's not worth it at all so I broke it off.....what im trying to say is I do think sometimes before I make decisions but sometimes I don't so don't give up on me dad im far from perfect I mean im Nomvula's son so....

\*\*\*His father chuckled while shaking his head\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: you sure are

Mj: ah ah what's that supposed to mean

Mj.Senior: exactly that

\*\*\*he said walking out laughing and Mj laid there sulking then a smiled appeared on his face\*\*\*

Mj: damn it worked....fuck yeah

\*\*\*he punched the air and he laughed\*\*\*

-----

## AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Mbali Snakes and Jase walked in the lounge and Castiel got up with a smile on his face as he looked at Mbali\*\*\*

Cass: and who's this beautiful mamasita

Snakes: ey voetsek that's my sister jou moer

Mbali: bhuti!

\*\*\*Cass turned and looked at Ruslan\*\*\*

Cass: did this fool just swear at me Madou

Ruslan: what did I say to you over the phone Cass

\*\*\* then Castiel chuckled shaking his head and he looked at Snakes with a creepy smirk on his face and he walked over to Mbali\*\*\*

Cass: Cass is the name

\*\*\*he said stretching his hand for a handshake and Ruslan spoke\*\*\*

Ruslan: and she's Ray's wife Mbali

\*\*\*he pulled his hand back and took a step back with a smile on his face\*\*\*

Cass: damn....umm yeah got it!

\*\*\*then he looked at Mbali\*\*\*

Cass: nice to finally meet the woman that tamed my boy.... damn you're beautiful

\*\*\*Mbali didn't even know what to say all she could do was smile a bit looking at him\*\*\*

Ruslan: his flower that's my crazy unmannered brother Castiel

Castiel: he forgot to say his elder brother

Snakes: heh?

\*\*\*Mbali frowned\*\*\*

Mbali: you look younger than Ruu how can you be his elder brother

Castiel: good genes my lady...good genes

Jay: good genes my foot

\*\*\*he said and sat down and Snakes looked at him frowning and he could see Jay knew something they didn't know\*\*\*

Mbali: wow you have good genes indeed

\*\*\*she said still amazed by how young he looked\*\*\*

Castiel: and you're beautiful even with your red and swollen cheek

\*\*\*Mbali looked away embarrassed\*\*\*

Jase: enough man!

Snakes: iyadelela lemfene nx (this baboon is disrespectful)

Castiel: imfene uyihlo (a baboon is your father)

Snakes: uthini? (what did you say)

\*\*\*He said getting up and Jay held his arm\*\*\*

Jay: myeke Mamba (leave him Mamba)

Ruslan: Castiel what did I just say

Castiel: I will not stand here and be disrespected by this boy Madou...is it a sin to talk to Ray's wife

Ruslan: calm the fuck down!

\*\*\*he warned him\*\*\*



Mbali: wow ok

\*\*\*she went to Kalu and picked him up he was still sleeping and she kissed his forehead with a smile on her face\*\*\*

Mbali: it was nice meeting you Cass

\*\*\*Castiel nodded and she walked away\*\*\*

Castiel: what's your problem man

\*\*\*He said to Snakes\*\*\*

Snakes: I don't like stupid niggas speaking to my little sister... that's what's wrong

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: well good luck with that cause Ray is my brother from another mother so I'll be talking to your little sister some more

Snakes: golo lakho ( your cunt)

Castiel: nawe ( you too)

Ruslan: are you two done

Castiel: when is Ray waking up I need to leave here before shit gets real

\*\*\*Ruslan ignored him and as he was about to stand up his eyes turned black and he quickly sat down and when Snakes saw his eyes he quickly got up and moved away\*\*\*

Snakes: what the fuck?

Castiel: Madou what's going on?

\*\*\*Ruslan didn't say anything he was still sleeping and she kissed his forehead with a smile on her face\*\*\*

Mbali: it was nice meeting you Cass

\*\*\*Castiel nodded and she walked away\*\*\*

Castiel: what's your problem man

\*\*\*He said to Snakes\*\*\*

Snakes: I don't like stupid niggas speaking to my little sister... that's what's wrong

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: well good luck with that cause Ray is my brother from another mother so I'll be talking to your little sister some more

Snakes: golo lakho ( your cunt)

Castiel: nawe ( you too)

Ruslan: are you two done

Castiel: when is Ray waking up I need to leave here before shit gets real

\*\*\*Ruslan ignored him and as he was about to stand up his eyes turned black and he quickly sat down and when Snakes saw his eyes he quickly got up and moved away\*\*\*

Snakes: what the fuck?

Castiel: Madou what's going on?

\*\*\*Ruslan didn't say anything he just moved his eyeballs around and his head as if he's looking around \*\*\*

Jay: what's wrong with him?

Castiel: Madou what is it that you seeing

Ruslan: eles estão em sua casa incendiada e eles sabem Aden estava lá (they are at your burned down house and they know Aden was there)

Castiel: shit!

\*\*\*he said brushing his head and he sat down next to Ruslan\*\*\*

Jase: what is he talking about?

\*\*\*he asked Castiel because he knows Portuguese and Castiel ignored him\*\*\*

Castiel: são todos eles? (is it all of them?)

\*\*\*Ruslan nodded and Castile swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruslan: eles parecem frustrados porque não sabem para onde ir a partir daí (they look frustrated cause they don't know where to go from there)

\*\*\*Castiel didn't say anything he just sat there quiet until Ruslan's eyes went back to normal and he sighed and he sat back\*\*\*

Jase: what's going on man?

Castiel: it's a family thing that doesn't want your involvement

Jase: ooh is it

Castiel: yeah so butt out

\*\*\*Ruslan got up\*\*\*

Ruslan: guys don't mind him ok....apparently he fell with his head the day he was born so he's not ok upstairs

\*\*\*he said walking away\*\*\*

Castiel: really Madou!

\*\*\*the Khumalo's laughed except for Jay\*\*\*

Ruslan: order something meaty to eat Ray will be mad- hungry when he waked up

Snakes: bafo what it is?

Jay: he's a vampire

Snakes: what...who?

Castiel: im sure he's talking about me

Snakes&Jase: WHAT?

Jay: yeah he showed me his fangs and his eyes even changed colour

Snakes: ithi uyadlala Nkosenye ( say you're playing Nkosenye)

\*\*\*he said with a frown on his face....he was now sitting down\*\*\*

Castiel: he's not

\*\*\*Then his eyes changed colour and he showed them his now long fangs and Snakes got up quickly from the couch and he moved away with a look you can't explain with simple words on his face\*\*\*

Snakes: hai hai....hai

\*\*\*He said shaking his head and Castiel chuckled and his eyes and fangs went back to normal\*\*\*

Jase: how is that possible when you're Ruslan's brother?

Castiel: Father was a Dracula he seduced our mother and fucked her hard then I was conceived

\*\*\* Jase and Snakes looked at him with disturbed looks on their faces and Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: relax I won't feed on ya'll....i heard beasts blood tastes like shit

\*\*\*Jase and Jay looked at each other then they both looked at Castiel\*\*\*

Jay: what the hell do you know about beasts?

Castiel: you have beasts inside of you right

Jase: how did you....ofcourse Ruslan nx

Jay: snitch ass motherfucker

Castiel: don't call my brother that dog

\*\*\*Jay chuckled\*\*\*

Jay: or what bloodsucker

\*\*\*Castiel's face got serious as he looked at Jay\*\*\*

Snakes: whoa whoa yimani kancani ( wait a minute) ....did you say fe...feed on us?

Castiel: yeah Vampires drink blood man

\*\*\*he said smirking at Snakes...he could already tell he wasn't a fan of supernatural things\*\*\*

Snakes: hell no.... RUSLAN....RUSLAN...EH MFOWETHU RUSLAN....RUSLAN!

\*\*\*he called Ruslan and Ruu came out of the kitchen with a cup of coffee on his hand\*\*\*

Ruslan: what?

Snakes: talk to your brother man...

\*\*\*Ruslan looked at Castiel who had a smile on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: what the hell did you do now?

Snakes: he's a vampire....a fucken vampire....why the hell didn't you tell us man!

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed and he gave Castiel a disappointed look cause he clearly told him to behave \*\*\*

Castiel: sorry bro

Ruslan: yeah he's a half breed vampire and no he won't suck your blood out so you can relax

\*\*\*he said sitting down\*\*\*

Snakes: relax....uthi relax....entlek what the hell is happening in this world....kuna amademoni...bathakathi manje kuna namavampire and bathi ama half breed what what ( there are demons...witches/wizards and now there are vampires and they call them half breed what what)

Jase: Nhlaka calm down before you suffer a heart attack

\*\*\*Snakes took out his phone ignoring Jase and he dialed Ntombi's numbers\*\*\*

Ntombi: sthandwa sam ( my love)

Snakes: lalela la Ntombi (listen here Ntombi)...i want you to go to checkers hyper and buy as many garlic as you can and hhayi lezo zepowder I want the ones you chop with a knife and look for lbhayibheli lam lowo enginikezwe ngumama ngiyeza manje (and look for my bible the one that was given to me by mom im on my way)

\*\*\*Castiel laughed and Ruslan Jay and Jase looked down holding their laughs in\*\*\*

Ntombi: ummm baby kwenzakalani? (baby what's going on)

Snakes: sthandwa sam please do as I say... please

\*\*\*Ntombi sighed\*\*\*

Ntombi: ok I'll go buy them but I want you to tell me what's going on

Snakes: I'll explain when I get home I promise

\*\*\*Castiel laughed louder\*\*\*

Ntombi: who's that is laughing ingathi uyahlanya ( as if he's mentally disturbed )

Snakes: God's reject....even no satan akamfuni sthandwa sam so angazi nokuthi ngithi yini nje ( even satan doesn't want him so I don't even know what he is)

\*\*\*the twins busted out with loud laughter and Castiel kept a straight face\*\*\*

Snakes: go and buy lezo garlic and I'll see you when I get home

Ntombi: ai ok...ngiyakthanda yezwa ( I love you ok)

Snakes: uthandwa yimi sthandwa sam ( you're loved by me my love)

\*\*\*Ntombi blushed\*\*\*

Snakes: bye sthandwa sam

Ntombi: bye

\*\*\*they ended the call\*\*\*

Castiel: uzonya for what you just said to your wife about me

Snakes: angikhulumi nabantu abafile mina ( I don't talk to dead people) go and talk to La Parca im sure he'll be happy to talk to his long lost brother

\*\*\*he said moving and he went to the kitchen leaving the twins laughing their asses off then Cass got up and Ruslan stopped him\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't even think about it...he's Mbali's brother and Ray will fucken kill you if you make his flower cry like that

Castiel: he's busy insulting me Madou

Ruslan: he's like this man just let him be

Castiel: you don't know what he said man

Jay: you shouldn't have showed him your fangs in the fucken first place so it's your fault

Jase: mmmmh you shouldn't have

\*\*\*he said laughing\*\*\*

Ruslan: mmmmh now suck it up....you started this whole shit

Castiel: mxm

\*\*\*after some time Snakes came back with two butter knives tied with a string together in a cross " + " shape and Ruslan and the twins busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

Castiel: now he's going too far Madou

Snakes: udlalele kude nami wena lesilo ( play far away from me lesilo) uyangizwa and im not playing or else I'll burn you with the blood of Jesus unye nyi

\*\*\*laughter filled the room and Castiel got up and went towards the kitchen shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: this is gonna be a fucken long day nx

-----

LATER AT NIGHT

\*\*\*the Khumalos left and so did Castiel and Ruslan after Ray woke up....him and Mbali haven't said anything to each other and it was just tense in the house.... Later Mbali and Kalu went to sleep while Ray was in his study lying on the couch...he kept replying his fight with Mbali over and over in his head and the disrespect he felt then his mind went to Mbali's cries especially when he slapped her....he clenched his jaws thinking about it.... he couldn't believe he did that to his own flower then he sighed and he got angry thinking about Celine and that all that happened is because of her....

After three hours he got up and switched off the lights and he went to check if all the doors were locked and he also switched off the lights and he went upstairs....he got there and found Mbali sleeping with Kalu next to her on the bed and he sighed as he was about to lift Kalu up Mbali spoke\*\*\*

Mbali: leave him

Ray: he needs to sleep in his crib

Mbali: you know what its fine I'll go sleep with him in the guest bedroom

\*\*\* she said pulling off the covers\*\*\*

Ray: why would you do that....you're my wife Mbali

Mbali: so?

\*\*\*he looked at her and she looked away\*\*\*

Ray: is this how things will be from now on?

\*\*\*she got out of bed and she walked to Kalu' side and Ray stopped her\*\*\*

Ray: we need to talk about this my flower



Mbali: there's nothing to talk about Ray....i think you should move out

Ray: that's not happening you hear me

\*\*\*he said getting worked up\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please

Ray: im not going anywhere and neither are you!

Mbali: so you gonna force me to share this house with you

Ray: im your husband damn it.... I paid your fucken bride price

Mbali: fine then since money is suddenly an issue....how much did you pay and I'll tell my brothers to pay you back.... with interest

\*\*\*Ray looked at Mbali with a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Mbali: get out of my way Ray

\*\*\*he didn't move\*\*\*

Mbali: move Ray

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice and Ray moved closer to her\*\*\*

Ray: I love you Mbali and I messed up big time but im not losing you

Mbali: move Ray

Ray: I love you you hear...I love you

Mbali: you know what fine you'll sleep with Kalu and if he gives you trouble you can bring him to me

\*\*\*she turned and walked out and Ray sat down on the bed and he rubbed his head roughly and he sighed\*\*\*

\*\*\*in the middle of the night Mbali heard the door open and she switched the lights on and Ray was standing there naked with his dick hard pointing north with veins popping\*\*\*

Mbali: what the h...

\*\*\*she said that and swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ray: I couldn't let you give me a head or want to see you naked cause I was stressed out and I knew if I get naughty with you im gonna end up traumatizing you..... I tend to lose control Mbali and I become a monster that's why back before I met you I would never go for an innocent nice girl ever cause ya'll take things into heart and you never forget and gets traumatized easily

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ray: and about the baby she's older than our relationship and marriage if you calculate correctly

\*\*\*she looked down\*\*\*

Ray: and I didn't know about her until yesterday when Celine send me a picture and a message

\*\*\*she continued to look down\*\*\*

Ray: about me cheating....well it happened on the early stages of us dating and for the first time ever I felt like shit after sleeping with another woman and I've never cheated ever and I vowed to myself to never do that again

\*\*\*tears ran down her cheeks and she quickly wiped them\*\*\*

Ray: I know I hurt you and shit got out of hand and im sorry for laying a hand on you but...

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ray: you disrespected me Mbali....you fucken embarrassed me in front of my friend

Mbali: well you deserved it

Ray: I deserved it?

Mbali: yeah you did

\*\*\*she said looking at him and he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: you think you know me huh? you think you got me figured out is that it

\*\*\* he moved closer to the bed and by now his dick was dripping pre cum and she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ray: the only person in this whole fucken world who knows me better than I know myself is Ruslan and he knows I hate being disrespected in any way!

\*\*\*She swallowed hard because he looked scary now\*\*\*

Ray: I tried to protect you from experiencing a dark sexual side I have and you had the fucken guts to tell me shit saying there are men out there who would give up their wealth just to tap that ass huh

\*\*\*He got really close and he roughly pulled her covers off her\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray what are you....

\*\*\*she didn't finish as Ray grabbed her roughly and pulled her towards him and he pulled her from the bed and she stood next to him looking scared\*\*\*

Ray: and not only that but you laid your fucken hands on me....is that what your grandmother taught you huh....have you seen her lay her hands on her husband?

\*\*\*he said grabbing her pyjama shirt and he ripped it apart and her breath hinged as she looked shit scared\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray

Ray: you wanna see the other side of me right? you wanna see me lose my shit and fucken traumatize you for life...is that it

Mbali: n...no

\*\*\*he pulled her pyjama shorts off and she wasn't wearing an underwear and he roughly turned her around \*\*\*

Mbali: Ray don't please I haven't healed completely

Ray: you wanna give other men what belongs to me right and you've suddenly become the husband in our marriage abi....you have a dick now Mbali is that it!

Mbali: Ray look ok I... listen we....

\*\*\* he bend her roughly and pressed her head on the bed hard and he opened her legs\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please stop...don't do this

Ray: im a fucken bad man Mbali but I chose to become a good man just for you....yes I once cheated but I chose to change for you and you fucken disrespected me in front of my friend!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice and she started crying\*\*\*

Ray: shut up!....or else this time around I'll let La Parca deal with Saint as you watch

\*\*\*she muffed her cries\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please

\*\*\*he moved the tip of his dick on her other hole (ass) lubricating it with his pre cum and she moved forward with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Ray: who said you should move...did I say move!

\*\*\*he said with a firm voice\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please I have never done anal sex before

Ray: I want to make sure you never give other fuckers out there what belongs to me....after this hole then next it's the honey pot when you're healed....im gonna fucken teach you a lesson you'll never forget...

\*\*\*he pushed the tip in and she screamed moving forward and he pulled her back and held her in place as she cried\*\*\*

INSERT.....14

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please im sorry...im sorry I didn't mean it I was just angry

Ray: you went out there wearing a skimpy dress showing my yellow thighs to hungry horny motherfuckers in the mall right!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please

\*\*\*he pushed the tip and half of it went in and she screamed with tears coming out\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray it hurts please stop

\*\*\*she said crying then the lights started flicking\*\*\*

Ray: go back to sleep Saint or I'll let La Parca out and he'll fucken deal with you!

\*\*\*he shouted but the lights didn't stop flicking\*\*\*

Ray: I SAID GO BACK TO SLEEP NOW SAINT BEFORE I FUCKEN GET ANGRY...THIS IS BETWEEN MY WIFE AND I NOW FUCK OFF!

\*\*\*he roared\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please im sorry...please stop it hurts

\*\*\*He pushed the rest of the tip in and she screamed again trying to move forward and he tightened the grip around her waist with his right hand while his left hand was pressing her head down on the bed\*\*\*

Ray: you gonna disrespect me again

Mbali: no...no I promise...im sorry

Ray: will you ever threaten to give other men what belongs to me

Mbali: no...no I'll never do that

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Ray: will you ever threaten to leave me again

Mbali: no...please stop it hurts Ray

\*\*\*she said crying with the lights still flicking because of Saint\*\*\*

Ray: if you ever cheat on me Mbali I'll fucken kill you you hear me....i'll fucken kill you and kill myself you sabi (you understand)

Mbali: yes yes

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit then he pulled out and he pulled her up and turned her around and she was still crying\*\*\*

Ray: why are you crying huh...you wanna wake Saint up so he can come here and stick his demon nose in our business huh?

\*\*\*she shook her head no quickly....he bottom lip was even trembling\*\*\*

Ray: listen here.... I fucked up and you have every right to be angry and shit but I wont tolerate being disrespected Mbali ok

\*\*\*she nodded again\*\*\*

Ray: now wipe that shit off your face before I give you a real reason to cry!

\*\*\*she quickly wiped her tears off with her shaky hand and he stood there looking at her....he was angry and it took everything in him not to fuck her hard and roughly until she passes out as punishment but he knew it will traumatize her for life and he cant have that maybe if it was one of the woman whom he used to fuck before he met her who liked that kind of shit but this was his wife so he's not gonna do that to her even though he thinks she deserves it..... He then picked her up and he went back to their bedroom and he put her on the bed and he got her under the covers and went to check on Kalu inside his baby crib and he was sleeping\*\*\*

Ray: you better not wake my son up Saint or you'll fucken regret it

\*\*\*and Mbali swallowed hard cause this was a different side of Ray she hasn't met before....Anyway he went back to bed and he got in and laid on his back\*\*\*

Ray: come!

\*\*\*she didn't want him to touch her but she didn't wanna make him more angry than he already is so she rested her head on his chest and he held and they stayed like that for some time without saying anything to each other\*\*\*

Mbali: just so you know you're not forgiven with your cheating and lying

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ray: I know

Mbali: and tomorrow you gonna know how much you're not forgiven

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Ray: as long as you don't leave me then I'll take it like a man

Mbali: mmmmh we shall see

Ray: im serious you better not be thinking of leaving me Mbali or all hell will break lose

\*\*\*she didn't say anything she just closed her eyes\*\*\*

Ray: Mbali

Mbali: leave me alone im trying to sleep

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ray: im not playing with you

Mbali: can I sleep in peace please....i have a headache and my ass hole hurts

\*\*\*he kept quiet\*\*\*

Ray: "she better not be thinking of leaving me"

\*\*\* He thought..... Anyway in the morning Ray woke up to sounds of glass breaking and a sound of something being hit hard and he quickly looked beside him and Mbali wasn't there he then got panicked and he went to check on Kalu and he was still sleeping and he frowned then he quickly wore his boxers and he rushed downstairs calling Mbali's name\*\*\*

Ray: MBALI....MY FLOWER WHERE ARE YOU.....MBALI!

\*\*\*he got to the garage cause that's where the sound was coming from and what he found shocked him to the core..... he stopped and froze with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Mbali: that's for putting you huge ass dick in my ass without my permission

\*\*\*then she walked past him with a baseball bat on her right hand and a butcher knife on her left hand and she walked back inside swaying her ass with an angry look on her face she was still in her birth suit ( she was naked)....as for Ray he couldn't believe what he was seeing his three weeks old brand new 2019 metallic-black Maserati GranTurismo ( the devil's fork) was covered in blue paint and both the front windshield and the rear windshield were smashed and so was all the windows of the car and it had dents all over it and its tires were slashed with a knife\*\*\*

Ray: fuck nooo... nooo... no no no

\*\*\*he said with his hands on top of his head and a horrified look on his face\*\*\*

Ray: my car....my baby....my fucken baby!

\*\*\*he shouted with his hands on top of his hand\*\*\*

-----

NIGERIA

\*\*\*Mj woke up to someone shaking him and he found Heath and Jabu standing next to his bed\*\*\*

Mj: brother Heath and brother Jabu.... you...you're here

Heath: drop the fucken act Mj

Mj: huh?

Jabu: hai fosek man jou rubber neck.... a gona a hidden camera mo so tlogela go e ketsa Mr bean (Piss off you rubber neck....there no hidden camera here so stop acting like Mr bean)

Mj: i....i

\*\*\*he stuttered\*\*\*

Jabu: fotsek....wa bona wena le leretenyana kao bona o nagana gore o clever neh well Mshikaro le nna we gonna show you gore re chunang to di bari tsa go iketsa diclever( piss off.... you see you and your small dick you think you're clever well Mshikaro and I we gonna show you what we do to fools who think are clever)

Heath: mo chaele Mjava....die boy thinks re di bari ( tell him Mjava.... this boy thinks we are fools)

Mj: what.... no...no

Jabu: wa jaja gore uncle le vrou ya gae ba worried byang heh ( are you aware that uncle and his wife are worried)

Mj: um let me explain bros please

Heath: do you sometimes think Mj huh.... aunt Patience is fucken blaming herself for your shit....she thinks if she knocked off early maybe she would have stopped you from taking the pills

Jabu: and a go na suicide ya nex mo.... o tletse ka masepa fela wena ( there's no suicide here....you're just full of shit)

Mj: I was scared and desperate ok...I didn't mean for things to get out of hand

Jabu: fotsek desperate ya masepa....o dlala ka go boda wena heh?....( you're playing with death huh?)

\*\*\*Mj didn't say anything\*\*\*

Heath: by the time im done with you Mj heh heh....

\*\*\*he said shaking his head\*\*\*

Heath: na death you dey want abi ( its death you want right)

Mj: no bros I know I dey mess up big time but I no have another plan to avoid an ass whoopin abeg no vex I was just desperate



Heath: well you dey wish you got that ass whoopin by the time we are done with you

Mj: w...what? no ooo....ah ah I cannot survive suicide and avoid an ass whooping from dad only to get beaten to death by you ooo

\*\*\*he said panicking\*\*\*

Heath: shut up!

Mj: bros I dey mess up big time I know but im your little bro

\*\*\*he pleaded with Heath\*\*\*

Heath: so just because im your big brother it means I must let you stress out dad and aunty and also let you mess up our family name huh?

Mj: no but im still your little bro

Jabu: tshwara (take) and get dressed

\*\*\*He threw the bag at him\*\*\*

Mj: but im....

Heath: you're discharged so get up and get dressed

Mj: but ma said she'll come pick me up

Heath: well we volunteered to come pick you up so get dressed before you make me angry

Mj: but...

Heath: ah ah I swear this boy can talk for Africa Mjava..... mxm I said get dressed jorr!

\*\*\*He said interrupting him looking pissed\*\*\*

Jabu: apara o tlogele go re gotolela matlho jou fokon hond ( get dressed and stop staring at us you fucken dog)

\*\*\*Mj swallowed hard and he slowly got out of bed\*\*\*

Jabu: tlogela go act(a) e kare o tshwere ke mogwete and make it quick ( stop acting like your ass is painful and make it quick)

\*\*\* then a nurse walked in\*\*\*

Nurse: Junior I see you're ready to go home mmmmh

Mj: yeah

\*\*\*he faked a smile\*\*\*

Nurse: are these your brothers

Heath: ey make it snappy Mj we don't have all day

Nurse: umm hey guys im Vanessa....i must say your brother here is a character...a funny one at that

\*\*\*she said stretching her hand out for a handshake with a smile on her face\*\*\*

Jabu: and we are happily married

Nurse: ummm I was just introducing myself

Jabu: we are not illiterate meaning we can read your name tag nx le smile sa masepa ( with a shitty smile)

\*\*\*Heath chuckled\*\*\*

Nurse: wow ummm

Heath: just leave Vanessa cause once he starts he won't finish

\*\*\*she looked at Mj\*\*\*

Nurse: go well Junior it was nice meeting you

MJ: ummm yeah thanks

\*\*\*then she walked out\*\*\*

Mj: that was unnecessary bros....she promised me her numbers before I leave

Jabu: voetsek! o isa kae dinumber tsa sgogwana sele...o sa batlo ntlatsa phinya Mj now get dressed! (what do you want with that old woman's numbers.... don't make me angry Mj now get dressed)

\*\*\*Mj sulked \*\*\*

Mj: fine now can you give me some privacy to change then

Jabu: wannyela re go tlhakotse o le ngwana o nnya masepa amagreen and nou o tlo re botsa ka privacy ( you must be crazy we used to wipe your ass when you were still a baby with your green shit and now you're telling us about privacy)

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: apara man o tlogele go re senyetsa nako jou rubber neck ( get dressed and stop wasting our time you rubber neck)

Mj: I swear ma is gonna know about this treatment im getting from you two mxm

Jabu: apara o tlogele go ova masepa ( get dressed and stop talking nonsense)

Mj: mxm

-----

\*\*\*they were now walking out of the hospital going to the car when Heath took out his phone and dialed someone\*\*\*

Heath: is everything ready

Man: yeah man but what do you want to do with these frogs man

Heath: I want to teach some mumu a lesson

\*\*\*Mj looked at him with a frown until he finished with the call\*\*\*

Jabu: keng ekare o bone lesilo ntwana ( what's wrong it's as if you've seen a ghost boy)

Mj: what lesson are you talking about bros?

Heath: you'll see

\*\*\*he said unlocking the car and out of the blue Mj ran away as if he was being chased by a dog and Jabu and Heath stood there shocked then they busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

-----

AT THE HOUSE RUSLAN BOUGHT FOR THANDI AND THE BOYS

\*\*\*Castiel and Ruslan were having breakfast catching up when Ruslan's phone rang and he smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: amour

Thandi: hey you good

Ruslan: I am now and you

Thandi: im ok I just miss you

Ruslan: I miss you too baby but don't worry I'll see you in..... four hours' time

Thandi: ooh ok then

\*\*\*she said sounding excited\*\*\*

Ruslan: so how are my boys?

\*\*\*"and girl" he thought and Castiel chuckled as he read his mind\*\*\*

Castiel: you fucken sly dog

\*\*\*Ruslan threw a spoon at him and he ducked laughing\*\*\*

Thandi: they are good they also miss you

Ruslan: don't worry I'll see them later

Thandi: ok...ummm Ruu

Ruslan: my love

\*\*\*she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Thandi: ummm he send me a message with a different number

Ruslan: who

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Thandi: Jackson

\*\*\* he huffed with a pissed off look on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: what did he say?

Thandi: umm I'll forward it to you

Ruslan: ok

Thandi: you ok?

Ruslan: as long as you're always this open to me about things that happen without my knowledge and you're not entertaining him then I'll always be ok

\*\*\*she breathed out relieved\*\*\*

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: I hope you had your breakfast its already 11am

Thandi: ummm im about to have it now

Ruslan: why now....you're supposed to eat when you wake up Thandi

\*\*\* “ why are you starving my daughter” He thought and Castiel laughed again as he read his mind again\*\*\*

Thandi: well I woke up 20 minutes ago and I just finished taking a shower

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh

Thandi: yeah and don't say anything....this days im always tired and I don't know why

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: I wasn't planning on saying anything amour

Thandi: mxm

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: go and feed my d....umm go and eat before you pass out please

Thandi: o sambora tuu ( don't bore me please)....i wont pass out hao

Ruslan: what was that?

Thandi: nothing you should know....ok shap let me go eat

Ruslan: just so you know im gonna get you for that.....I love you

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: I love you too

\*\*\*they ended the call and Thandi forwarded him the message she got from Jackson and Ruslan hit the table hard and he got up looking angry\*\*\*

Castiel: calm down man

Ruslan: I knew he wanted her....that son of a bitch wants my woman Cass!

Castiel: who

Ruslan: some piece of shit

Castiel: well at least your woman is not entertaining him....my own woman is falling for the piece of shit

\*\*\* he said getting up and Ruslan gave him a confused look on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: you have a woman in your life...I thought Juana is dead

Castiel: fuck you

\*\*\*he said pushing a laughing Ruslan\*\*\*

Castiel: I mean Kazi man

Ruslan: so she's your woman huh

\*\*\*he said mocking him\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck off man can you just get serious

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed and he stopped\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok im serious now

\*\*\*Castiel huffed and he went to sit down and Ruslan followed and sat down too\*\*\*

Castiel: I think she's falling for that hitboy....i mean he doesn't even qualify to be called a hitman in my book....fucken shit

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: you and that Juana said I must court her the right way and shit and now I have to compete with that boy...imagine

Ruslan: what is it are you suddenly becoming a chicken man

Castiel: you didn't just call me a chicken Madou

Ruslan: im asking....i mean what if she is falling for that guy

\*\*\*he didn't say anything he just clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ruslan: wait a minute....damn you're falling for her or you already have

Castiel: fall for who....don't be ridiculous man

\*\*\*he said getting up and he went to the fridge to take out bottled water and he drank from the bottle and Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: wow the kidnapper who fell in love with his victim

\*\*\*then he laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: shut up man I haven't fallen for anyone

\*\*\*he said being defensive\*\*\*

Ruslan: then why is it painful to see her falling for another man huh?

Castiel: that thing is not a man ok he's a fucken boy

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: im sure he's a man to her if you know what I mean

\*\*\*Castiel kept quiet looking angry\*\*\*

Ruslan: my advice bro is first admit that you have fallen in love with the lady then everything will fall into place

Castiel: mxm what do you know im sure you just smiled at Thandi and she fell into your arms and I must say its fucken creepy that you can get angry one second and within another second you switch to laughing and making jokes....that shit I creepy as fuck Madou

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: and you know what they say about people like that.....serial killers

\*\*\*Ruslan threw a fork at him\*\*\*

Ruslan: your mama and your dracula father mxm infact your entire vampire ancestors you shithead

\*\*\*Castiel laughed out loud\*\*\*

Castiel: Ray ruined you with his pidgin accent

Ruslan: fosek

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: and he knows fosek too wow

\*\*\*Ruslan shook his head chuckling\*\*\*

Castiel: ok ok on a serious note how did you meet Thandi

Ruslan: well she was still married to some fucker who's dead now when I met her and no I didn't kill the fucker

\*\*\*Castiel looked at him with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck no

Ruslan: yeah and look now she's all mine so stop complaining cause your girl is not even married to the "hitboy" as you call him

Castiel: well im not in love with her

Ruslan: and you're not a vampire boo hoo

\*\*\*he said with a bored tone and Castiel showed him the middle finger\*\*\*

Ruslan: just admit it and in no time she'll be yours or watch her fall deep in love with that guy.... its as simple as that

Castiel: I own her so no matter what she belongs to me

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: continue denying your feelings and that's if vampires have feelings and that "hitboy" as you call him will fuck her impregnate her and wife her

Castiel: that will never happen

Ruslan: nothing is impossible Cass I mean look at Ray who would have thought he'll settle down and actually love the woman so...

Castiel: shut up man....Kazi will never....

\*\*\*Castiel interrupted him\*\*\*

Ruslan: will never what?

\*\*\*Ruslan interrupted him too\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck you

\*\*\*he said walking out\*\*\*

Ruslan: stop denying your feelings man and she'll be yours

Castiel: golo lakho Madou (your cunt Madou )

Ruslan: if it's an insult then you too you bloodsucking motherfucker.....and you better behave when Thandi gets here!

-----

## AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*after Ray mourned the death of his Maserati he went back to the house ready to deal with Mbali....he checked for her everywhere in the house but he couldn't find her and as he was about to go check in the backyard he saw the sliding door leading there opened and he walked out and saw Mbali standing a bit far from the braai stand with flames and smoke coming out of it she had Kalu strapped on her back...he wondered what she was doing there so he walked to them \*\*\*

Ray: what are you doing?

Mbali: teaching you a lesson



Ray: what?

Mbali: a lesson to never in your life threaten to kill me

\*\*\*then she started walking away\*\*\*

Ray: what are you talking about?

\*\*\*she stopped and looked at him\*\*\*

Mbali: your lucky pair of boxers and one of your favourite vintage vinyl record are burning in there

Ray: WHAT?

Mbali: mmmmh and your oldest whiskey bottle in your collection is now in the sewage pipes and that husband dearest is for cheating on me

Ray: te...tell me you kidding Mbali.....do you fucken know how much that bottle cost!

\*\*\*he said getting worked up with his heart beating fast\*\*\*

Mbali: mmmmh 50 year old THE BALVENIE and you said it costs R699 999 right

\*\*\*his hands started shaking as he looked at her shocked....angry and panicking \*\*\*

Ray: no...no...no you didn't...tell me you didn't Mbali!

\*\*\*he said suddenly looking pale\*\*\*

Mbali: breakfast is ready now come and eat

\*\*\*she said walking away and he just sat down on the ground as he felt his knees giving up on him....his hands were still shaking and his heart was beating fast.....he felt like he was about to pass out\*\*\*

-----

NIGERIA

\*\*\*they drove around until they found Mj...he was sitting on a rock with sweat all over his face breathing heavily...he got up when he saw them ready to continue running\*\*\*

Mj: don't come out of that car or I'll scream....i swear I will

Jabu: hebanna nchaele mo Mshikaro die kind o thuntshitse dai cheri Lerato byang a tshwere ke June-July so nou ( tell me here Mshikaro how did this kid shoot that chick Lerato when he's shaking like this now)

Heath: beats me Mjava

\*\*\*then he peeped out of the window\*\*\*

Heath: get in the car Mj

Mj: that's not happening

Heath: ok then since you got no money and no cellphone on you then say hi to malaria-filled mosquitos at night ritualists mad people and ghosts at night for me

Mj: wh...what?

Heath: mmmmh so if you change your mind meet us here tomorrow morning....enjoy the street life

Mj: WAIT....ARE YOU MAD HOW CAN YOU LEAVE ME HERE....YOU KNOW SOMETIMES I WONDER IF YOU'RE MY REAL BROTHER MXM

\*\*\*he said walking to the car with a serious look on his face and Heath and Jabu busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

INSERT.....16

.

.

.

NIGERIA

\*\*\*They arrived at some building and Jabu and Heath sat still not getting out of the car\*\*\*

Mj: what...what are we doing here bros?

Heath: you'll see

\*\*\*Mj swallowed hard\*\*\*

Mj: I hope you two are not here to sell me to ritualists ooo

\*\*\*Jabu chuckled\*\*\*

Heath: and if we are?

\*\*\*Mj quickly tried to open the car door but it was locked\*\*\*

Mj: open this door....open it I want to get out!

Jabu: ey blei stel man or keng o thomile go gafa? ( sit still or what have you started going crazy)

Mj: brother Ezeh please don't do this....God is watching ooo he's watching and he no like wetin you dey do ....abeg open the door shame the devil and open this door abeg

\*\*\*he said looking scared\*\*\*

Heath: mxm I swear Mj if I hear "phem" from your mouth again I'll deal with you

\*\*\*he warned him and Mj kept quiet keeping himself from speaking but eish it was hard....then two scary looking guys came to the car and Heath unlocked the door and they opened Mj's door and grabbed his arm pulling him out of the car and he screamed\*\*\*

Mj: ey wetin you dey do ( what are you doing) ... brother Heath help me.. don't let them take me im begging you

\*\*\*then one of the guys injected him on his neck and he passed out\*\*\*

Guy: we should put him in bros?

Heath: yeah but I'll put the frogs in myself

\*\*\*they nodded and carried him away\*\*\*

Jabu: kao chaela Mshikaro die kind o inyela ge a tsoga ( im telling you Mshikaro that boy will shit himself when he wakes up)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Heath: we need pictures for big Ray

\*\*\*they laughed again\*\*\*

-----

### INSIDE RUSLAN'S CAR

\*\*\*Thandi was looking outside the window with tears running down her cheeks while Ruslan was just sitting there staring into space....They just got out of the doctor's office with conformation that Thandi is in fact pregnant and the bleeding wasn't periods but spotting that usually happens to most women on their first trimester the baby was ok and the heartbeat too was strong..... Well Ruslan didn't understand why Thandi was mad and why she wasn't happy that she was pregnant he was in fact disappointed by her reaction\*\*\*

Ruslan: so you're not gonna say anything about the fact that you're pregnant

\*\*\*She kept quiet wiping her tears off and she continued to look outside the window.....they were still parked outside the Doctor's surgery\*\*\*

Ruslan: Thandi?

Thandi: did you get me pregnant on purpose?

\*\*\*Ruslan kept quiet looking at her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: why would you ask me that?

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone\*\*\*

Thandi: im asking so I expect an answer from you

\*\*\*she said with a serious tone too and Ruslan chuckled a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: and if I did?

\*\*\*she turned and looked at him with a serious look on her face\*\*\*

Thandi: did you or did you not

Ruslan: I said what if I did

\*\*\*she breathed in and out loudly\*\*\*

Thandi: is that why you refused to use a condom even after I told you im not on any contraceptives

Ruslan: no

\*\*\*he said still looking at her\*\*\*

Thandi: then how the hell did you know I was pregnant and come to think of it you began touching my stomach few days after we had sex

Ruslan: we made love!

\*\*\*he said correcting her and she gave im a deadly look but he wasn't moved\*\*\*

Thandi: how did you know Ruslan?

Ruslan: does it matter though amour

Thandi: YES IT DOES!

\*\*\*she said shouting and he raised an eyebrow at her\*\*\*

Ruslan: tone it down before you piss me off!

\*\*\*he said warning her....he was still as chilled as ever but his voice was filled with so much authority....he only had a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Thandi: mxm

\*\*\*she looked outside the window and Ruslan just continued to look at her\*\*\*

Ruslan: why are you acting like this amour?

Thandi: wena how did you know I was pregnant

Ruslan: I just knew ok

Thandi: let me guess it has something to do with your eyes changing colour right

\*\*\*Ruslan kept quiet a bit then he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: let's just go home and we will talk there

\*\*\*she didn't say anything and he started the car and drove away\*\*\*

-----

#### AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Mbali and Kalu were taking a nap upstairs and Ray was tired from searching the entire house for his precious ball he couldn't find it and that made him angrier and more frustrated....he then went to the kitchen and he took out bottled water and drank from the bottle then he searched for what he could eat in the fridge and he found a plate with untouched food in it then he saw pots on the stove and to him it meant Mbali cooked and that plate was probably his.....Anyway he took the plate and heated the food in the microwave and he sat down and started eating like a hungry animal ....record time he was finished and he downed the food with some beer he washed the plate and as he was about to walk out of the kitchen his stomach grumbled and he stopped walking and he held his stomach\*\*\*

Ray: mmmmh

\*\*\*he groaned as he started feeling some cramps...he moved again and the feeling got worse and he groaned again then he thought maybe is gas so he tried to release some but yeses instead he released more than gas....he quickly tightened his butt cheeks together and he ran to the toilet that is downstairs and the moments he sat down gwa nyewa blaen (shit happened)\*\*\*

\*\*\* It's been an hour and he was still busy in the toilet....he was covered in sweat and his eyes were red and he was now shirtless and his ass hole was on fire..... Well another hour passed and he was now sitting on the cold tiled floor waiting for his stomach to start acting up again he was weak and sweating and he felt like shit....anyway it looked like he was done shitting so he got up balancing himself with the wall and he walked out slowly....he went upstairs and when he got inside the bedroom he found Mbali sitting up on the bed busy on her phone....he ignored her and just went straight to the bathroom and soon Mbali heard the shower running\*\*\*

Mbali: I hope that Epsom salt (magnesium sulfate compound) ikhiphe bonke ubufebe out of his system nx ( I hope that Epsom salt took out all his whore ways out of his system nx)

\*\*\*she said to herself and she continued to concentrate on her phone.... after sometime the shower stopped running and soon she heard Ray groaning loud inside the bathroom and she smiled\*\*\*

Mbali: mmmmh bukiphe bonke sthandwa sam....bonke nje ( take it all out my love... all of it)

\*\*\* soon the toilet flushed and the shower ran again\*\*\*

Mbali: don't worry sthandwa sam soon you'll be all clean and new and free of ivirus yobufebe and we will work on our marriage

\*\*\*after some time Ray walked out naked and shame he looked flushed he also looked weak and pale....he went to his underwear drawer and he took out some clean ones and wore them\*\*\*

Mbali: ummm are you ok

Ray: im fine!

\*\*\*he snapped at her\*\*\*

Mbali: jeez sorry for giving a damn then

\*\*\*she said and got out of bed and she walked to the door\*\*\*

Ray: im sorry.... I didn't mean to snap

\*\*\*she turned and looked at him\*\*\*

Ray: I think I ate something bad or it's a stomach bug.... I just don't know

\*\*\*He said sitting down on the edge of the bed looking down\*\*\*

Mbali: ooh what did you eat?

\*\*\*she said sounding worried and he groaned holding his stomach but the pain subsided quickly\*\*\*

Ray: I found a plate with cooked food in the....

\*\*\*he stopped talking and his eyes popped out and he swallowed hard\*\*\*

Mbali: what?

Ray: no...nothing

\*\*\* " no she wouldn't....would she?....well she's nighthawks daughter so.....damn would she?" is what he thought\*\*\*

Mbali: it must have been the mixed vege's I cooked then maybe I didn't wash them properly or something....i mean I didn't eat them cause you know I hate greens maybe that's why im ok

\*\*\*Ray swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ray: ummm yeah maybe

Mbali: ok I'll be back let me bring you pills that will stop the diarrhea

Ray: yeah

\*\*\*she walked out going downstairs to the medicine cabinet and he quickly reached for his phone and he dialed Ruslan's numbers\*\*\*

Ruslan: ey man can I call you back i....

\*\*\*Ray interrupted him\*\*\*



Ray: she's trying to kill me man

\*\*\*he was whispering\*\*\*

Ruslan: wait what?

Ray: I think she put something in my food and I can't stop shitting man....my ass is on fire...you need to help me man

Ruslan: who and what are you talking about

Ray: Mbali....i think she wants me dead man....i can't stop shitting and it all started after I ate the food she cooked

Ruslan: ummm where are you?

Ray: im home man you need to come and save me man I can't stop shitting man

\*\*\*Ruslan held his laugh and Ray rushed to the toilet and he continued "shitting" ....Ruslan heard Ray groaning and weird sounds coming from the end of the line and he cleared his throat trying by all means not to laugh\*\*\*

Ruslan: are you ok man

Ray: im dying man....you need to come and save me man im fucken dying

Ruslan: you're not dying so stop acting up....you'll be fine.... don't you think I would see your death coming from miles away

Ray: I don't care im dying and my murderer is in this fucken house with me and worst part is I sleep next to her every fucken night!

Mbali: babe you ok in there?

\*\*\*Ray jumped a bit\*\*\*

Ray: yea...yeahh I'll be out in a minute

Mbali: ok

Ray: she's even calling me babe....i swear she's going to kill me man

\*\*\* he whispered and Ruslan laughed....he tried to hold himself but he just couldn't and Thandi gave him an annoyed look cause she was still sulking from finding out she's pregnant....Ruslan drove inside the yard and he parked the car and Thandi opened the door and got out going inside and Ruslan stopped laughing when he saw Thandi walking inside looking pissed and he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: look man Mbali will never want you dead maybe she's just teaching you a lesson remember she's a woman scorned man and those are dangerous.... they are even worse than lucifer himself

\*\*\*he groaned again as he relived himself again\*\*\*

Ray: you're not helping man....i swear if I die it's all on you....all on you!

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and Ruslan busted out with laughter.....anyway Ray finished doing his business and he flushed and washed his hands and he got out....he found her sitting on the edge of the bed with a box of pills and bottled water\*\*\*

Mbali: shame....come and sit my love

\*\*\*he swallowed hard looking at her and he sat down\*\*\*

Mbali: take two they'll quickly stop the diarrhea

\*\*\*he took the box and read the instructions then he opened the bottled water and he sighed with relief that it was sealed and he drank the pills....she then helped him get under the covers and she kissed his forehead and took Kalu and she went downstairs.... Ray then took his phone and send Castiel a message and it read;

"I think Mbali is trying to kill me man...I know I cheated and hurt her but to kill me.....look if anything happens to me tell my brothers I love them and I love you and that asshole Ruslan too"

\*\*\*then he tried to sleep while lying on his stomach\*\*\*

-----

## AT THANDI'S NEW HOUSE

\*\*\*Castiel rushed in the lounge putting on his jacket and he found Ruslan and Thandi\*\*\*

Castiel: im rushing to Ray's house...his wife is....ummm he's not well man

Ruslan: relax he'll be fine....Mbali is just showing him flames for fucking up

Castiel: wait he called you?

Ruslan: yeah he fucked up so he should take it like a man

Castiel: ooh but damn he sounded...

Ruslan: he'll be fine man but you can go check on him for moral support.... I'll go see him later

Castiel: ooh ok

\*\*\*then he mind-communicated with him\*\*\*

Castiel: " are you two good"

Ruslan: " yeah"

Castiel: " she's pretty pissed off so be careful"

Ruslan: " wait did you read her mind"

\*\*\*Thandi just looked at them as they looked at each other speaking with their eyes and she frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: "yeah but when ya'll where leaving earlier and dude she was mad-angry"

\*\*\* he mind-communicated laughing then he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Castiel: ok guys later

\*\*\*he walked to the door\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't eat anything she gives you

\*\*\*Ruslan said and he chuckled and Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: im on a.... "bloody" diet anyway

Ruslan: CASS!

\*\*\*he laughed walking out then Ruslan cleared his throat turning his focus back to Thandi\*\*\*

Thandi: mmm a re utlwe ( talk)

Ruslan: huh?

Thandi: start talking

Ruslan: you know I can also choose to speak in my mother tongue

\*\*\*she kept quiet and he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: fine... look im sorry for not telling you that you're pregnant...I just wanted you to find out on your own amour that's why I didn't tell you

Thandi: how you knew that im pregnant is what I want to know cause now that I remember you started touching my stomach the same week we started being intimate

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: are you sure you want to know

Thandi: I wouldn't be asking if I wasn't

Ruslan: don't be cheeky with me Thandi

\*\*\*she kept quiet looking at him with a raise eyebrow and Ruslan chuckled and he sat back\*\*\*

Ruslan: once I tell you how I knew I won't be able to.... "untell you" just so you know

Thandi: untell really?

\*\*\*she said with a bored look on her face and he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: damn you're beautiful amour and I can't wait to see our little girl I pray she comes looking like you in fact Im sure she'll look like you.... I can't wait to hold her in my arms and to spend the rest of my fucked up life protecting her and our boys

Thandi: im waiting for my answer Ruslan

\*\*\*she said ignoring what he just said and he laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok then since you can't let this go.....here it goes I have powers....special powers

\*\*\*she continued giving him the bored look\*\*\*

Ruslan: fine since you're like Thomas from the bible then look at that couch

\*\*\*he pointed at the couch and Thandi looked at it and Ruslan's eyes changed colour and he moved his index and middle finger from left to right and the couch moved\*\*\*

Thandi: wait...did that just happen

\*\*\* she said frowning and he moved it back to where it was and Thandi jumped back\*\*\*

Thandi: what the!

\*\*\*she said with her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Ruslan: clam down please

\*\*\*he said looking at her he could see she was freaked out\*\*\*

Thandi: how did you...how is that possible...I mean did that couch move....i mean what just happened defies the laws of physics...what the hell man!

Ruslan: like I said I have special powers....im a wizard Thandi

\*\*\*she gave him a shocked look...it was like she was frozen on the spot\*\*\*

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: that's how I knew you were pregnant that early

\*\*\*she kept quiet trying to process everything....it became silent for some time\*\*\*

Ruslan: say something amour

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: say something please

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Thandi: ho...how?

Ruslan: mother was a witch....one of the best ever lived....she was American while my father was a normal African man from Guinea Bissau

\*\*\*she swallowed again\*\*\*

Ruslan: I also have a PhD in Parapsychology it's a study of supernatural phenomenon.... I wanted to learn and gain more knowledge about the powers I inherited from my mother and I must say I aced it ....arg it's a long ass story and I'll tell you all about it some day

\*\*\*she just looked at him with her jaws dropped...he then got up and went to sit next to her and he kissed her cheek\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you amour and I hope you won't leave me because of this

\*\*\*he then put his hand on her belly\*\*\*

Ruslan: even if you decide to we both know I won't let you go so.....

\*\*\*she swallowed hard blinking too much and they kept quiet for some time until she spoke\*\*\*

Thandi: a witch huh?

Ruslan: a wizard my love

Thandi: its 6 and 9 same shit

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: well im a wizard who has a PhD amour so there's a difference

\*\*\*she swallowed and looked at him as he had a cute smile on his face \*\*\*

Thandi: well that PhD doesn't make the "wizard" part disappear Ruu

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: im a proud one amour and I wouldn't change it for anything.... look I don't fly on brooms or loafs of bread or any of those shits overnight witches do out there.... I don't have what you call tikoloshi's under my bed and any other shit those useless witches do out there

\*\*\*he then thought about his zombies and he cleared his throat....he couldn't tell her about that cause he might end up traumatizing her for life\*\*\*

Ruslan: I just have immense powers and I use them for good

\*\*\*she sighed with her heart pounding hard\*\*\*

Ruslan: please calm down amour your BP is raising

Thandi: ooh so you can also tell when my BP is raising mmmh?

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: I can hear your heart beating fast

Thandi: you can hear it

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah but only when im this close

\*\*\* a normal person would have to put his ear on her chest to hear her heart beating fast but Ruslan was sitting next to her and not even close close but he could heart it\*\*\*

Thandi: ooh God!

\*\*\*he pulled her closer and kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Thandi: so your "magic" is actually you using your powers

Ruslan: yeah

Thandi: I can believe this

Ruslan: don't think too much about this amour...im still the same Ruslan who loves you unconditionally

Thandi: does Ray Heath and Jabu know

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah Ray has known for years and Heath and that crazy brother of yours Jabu knew not long ago and if I was an evil man they wouldn't have let me be even an inch closer to you or the boys

\*\*\*"yes he's right they wouldn't" she thought.... then silence filled the room\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you amour so much

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ruslan: and this doesn't change anything amour this only means you know more about me more than any other woman I've been with knew about me or knew me

Thandi: so I should be happy that my fiancé is a wizard

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: no you should be happy that now you can be able to deal with people that messes with you using my spells

\*\*\*he thought she would laugh but she didn't instead she got off his hold and she stood up and looked at Ruslan with her hands on her waist\*\*\*

Thandi: ok...ok enough about you being a witch/wizard and me being pregnant cause it is what it is and I cant change any of it.... but what I can change or better yet what I want to know is what possessed you to shout at me like that earlier on

\*\*\*she said giving him a " you better answer me" look\*\*\*

Ruslan: what?



\*\*\*he said confused\*\*\*

Thandi: ke ra sebeta Ruslan sa go omya nna Thandi o se tseya kae ( im saying the gut to shout at me Thandi where did get it)

Ruslan: amour look i...

\*\*\*she interrupted him\*\*\*

Thandi: ema pele abuti o sa ntsena moganong assomblief (wait a minute bro don't interrupt me please)...all I want to know from you is the liver ke ra se..be..te Ruslan to shout at me like that where did you get it heh....first of all I didn't know I was pregnant so I want to know gore where did you get the liver the audacity kera sona se..be..te to talk to me like that

\*\*\* She said with an angry look on her face and Ruslan just looked at her shocked to the core\*\*\*

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\* Castiel arrived and he asked to see Ray and Mbali went to wake him up and the first thing he said when he saw Ray was " damn you look like shit"....anyhow they now just walked inside his study room and as soon as the door closed Castiel busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

Ray: mxm so Ruu told you

Castiel: a little but reading your wife's mind just painted a clear picture of what happened to you

\*\*\*he said laughing\*\*\*

Ray: mxm

Castiel: damn your wife is gangster man

\*\*\*Ray sighed and went to sit down then his eyes landed on his signed basketball nicely placed on his custom made bookshelf and he frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: what?

\*\*\*he just went to it and there was a note attached to it ....he took the note and it read;

“ im ready to fix our marriage now unless you want round 2 of the whole shit then im game my love”

\*\*\*he sighed shaking his head and he ended up chuckling then Castiel took the note from him and read it then he laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: so are you ready to fix things or you want round 2?

\*\*\*he said laughing\*\*\*

Ray: its not funny man

Castiel: it is cause you met your fucken match man.... its true when they say dynamites comes in small packages....damn she's gangster and I like her in fact im glad you married her

\*\*\*Ray put the letter down and he went to sit down and he clicked his tongue\*\*\*

Ray: you don't know what I've been through so stop praising her barbaric act Castiel

\*\*\*then there was a knock on the door and Mbali walked in with a tray....she walked to them and she put the tray down and it had two plates of food\*\*\*

Mbali: I ordered your favourite food from your favourite restaurant

\*\*\*she said with a smile\*\*\*

Ray: thanks but im not hungry

Mbali: don't be silly baby you need to eat so you can gain some strength haw cause you look a bit pale sthandwa sam

Castiel: mmmmh he does

\*\*\*Ray gave him a deadly stare\*\*\*

Mbali: see even Cass agrees with me now eat up

Castiel: don't worry I'll make sure he eats

Mbali: thank you

\*\*\*she said smiling at him\*\*\*

Mbali: ok then call me if you need anything else ok

Castiel: we will our wife

\*\*\*she laughed and she kissed Ray's cheek and she walked out and as soon as the door closed Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Ray: im not eating that food....i love her with everything in me but im not really to die....im not eating!

-----

NIGERIA

\*\*\*\*Mj moved a bit with his eyes still closed he felt something on his lips and he groaned...his hand automatically went to his mouth and it touched something soft then that thing moved to his left eye making noise and that's when he got alarmed...he quickly slapped it off his face and he opened his eyes sitting up straight and what he saw made his heart to skip a beat then continue beating at a fast pace....he moved back looking scared with his eyes moving around and he could see he was in a small room

filled with frogs with a small window that brought in some light and the worst thing is he has a phobia of frogs\*\*\*

Mj: no...no...no

\*\*\*he said looking at the frogs jumping around the small room making noise\*\*\*

Mj: SOMEONE HELP ME...HELP MEEE....PLEASEEE OOO

Voice: since you like going around shooting people and causing your mama and papa heart attacks then this will be your prison for the time being to calm the fuck down to earth and think about your life and the frogs will be your cell mates....

\*\*\*the voice spoke from the other side of the door\*\*\*

Mj: please ooo please man I dey learn my lesson abeg let me out

\*\*\*he begged still rooted on his spot with his eyes on the frogs\*\*\*

Voice: next time it will be a real police cell with real cell mates who would tear that ass up....so think about your life ooo! anyway be nice to your cell mates and don't mind them cause they tend to be noisy

\*\*\*the guy chuckled and walked away with Mj shouting and begging him to open the door while crying\*\*\*

Guy: you two are cruel man.....he's freaked out in there man he's even crying

Heath: bros water pass garri ( bro things have reached a breaking point) this boy need to learn man...Mj is too spoilt and im afraid one day he'll do something that will ruin his life....he always do shit cause he knows we will bail him out of it but one day he's gonna mess with the wrong people and bros mmmmh...

\*\*\*he said shaking his head\*\*\*

Jabu: yeah imagine if that girl was a daughter of one of those chiefs that have influence in high places heh....or the chief was some heartless motherfucker and when they walked in on them fucking he put a bullet on his head instead of beating him up

Guy: I don hear bros ( I hear you bros)

Heath: he maybe a teenager but next year he's going to varsity and varsity is no child's play man....that place can become hell for you if you're no focused...yes its fine to enjoy yourself and make new friends but that's where you also make enemies man that's where you shape your life and future or ruin it completely and with Mj thinking he's above anything and everyone.... im afraid cause im sure he'll make sure every freaken person knows he's our brother

Jabu: mmmmh eish..... life in SA is fast and dangerous bros and if you're not careful it will swallow you nja yam....the gangs there are too much and they target young boys to recruit them...then there's drugs and shit and Mj is not focused man he's too childish and irresponsible and we don't wanna wake up one morning to the police telling us to come and identify his body

\*\*\*Heath sighed looking worried\*\*\*

Jabu: damn eish Mshikaro skopo saka sa opa cause he boletse paragraph e yotlhe ka se ngamla fela yeses ( I have a headache from speaking the whole paragraph in English damn)

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Heath: yeah you did damn....

Jabu: ke sho lemadlozi a ka a maketse ( im sure even my ancestors are shocked)

\*\*\*Heath laughed out loud then after he calmed down he explained what Jabu said to the guy and he also laughed\*\*\*

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

INSERT.....17

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*AT THANDI'S NEW HOUSE\*\*\*\*

Ruslan: umm Amor look im sorry ok

Thandi: I didn't ask if you're sorry or not Ruslan I asked you where did you get the liver...sebeta sa go nshout(a) ( the gut to shout at me)

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed and he got up and he tried to touch her but she moved away from him with a pissed off look on her face\*\*\*

Ruslan: amor don't do this please

\*\*\*he said with a pained look on his face\*\*\*

Thandi: Ruslan im waiting ok....im pressed so I need to pee but im not going anywhere until you answer my question

\*\*\*Ruslan looked at her shocked\*\*\*

Ruslan: ummm ok look I shouldn't have amor I don't know what got into me I just panicked my love and im sorry

\*\*\*he didn't know what to say that will make her calm down....that's all he could come up with....she looked at him fuming then she clicked her tongue and walked away\*\*\*

Ruslan: amor!

\*\*\*he said going after her....she ignored him and she went inside the bathroom and slammed the door shut and locked it then Ruslan sighed and he rubbed his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: this is gonna be one of the longest 9 months of my life

\*\*\*he stood there and waited for her to come out...after she did her business she flushed and washed her hands then she walked out and found Ruslan standing there with his hands inside his pockets\*\*\*

Thandi: im hungry

\*\*\*he raised his eyebrow looking at her \*\*\*

Thandi: what?

\*\*\*he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Ruslan: umm nothing I just thought you're still angry at me that's all

Thandi: I am but your child is hungry so is there still food here?

\*\*\*he stopped himself from smiling\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah we cooked enough food

\*\*\*she walked passed him going to the kitchen and he smiled widely shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: this child better have mercy on me im too old for all this

\*\*\*he went after her...then his phone beeped and he checked it was a message from Castiel...he was telling him that he's going back to KZN but he'll come back in a few days' time....then his phone rang and it was an international call and he answered it\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah

Voice: dad

Ruslan: Carl

Carl: yeah how you doing....i saw you email

\*\*\*he said with a worried tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: im still kicking and my enemies still tremble at my presence

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Carl: good to know....umm you said the Brethren's are coming and that my long lost uncle is back on the email

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah apparently there's a new leader and he coming after Castiel and I well more like coming after me so I need to make sure that you're safe

\*\*\*Carl sighed\*\*\*

Carl: do they know your current location

Ruslan: they know we are in South Africa so it's a matter of time before they find the exact location we are at now

\*\*\*Carl sighed getting more worried\*\*\*

Carl: ok so what can I do...how can I help?

Ruslan: I want you close to me so I'll know you're safe

\*\*\*Carl sighed\*\*\*

Carl: what about school dad and mom you know she'll flip if I leave without a valid reason...even if you tell her the slight truth about why im coming to you she'll still flip and cause unnecessary drama

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed and he rubbed his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: I hear you my boy I just want you to be safe that's all

Carl: I know dad...look I'll be extra careful and during school recess I'll come to you how about that

\*\*\*Ruu sighed again\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok...you still got your potions and you still safe-proofing the house right

Carl: yeah....with the things I see dad I'd be a fool not to do all that

Ruslan: ok

Carl: and the prodigal uncle?

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: we buried the hatchet but damn he's a pain in the ass

\*\*\*Carl laughed\*\*\*

Carl: so when I come to visit I'll meet him right?



Ruslan: yeah

Carl: I can't wait to see a real life Vamp....I've seen ghosts and demons to last me a life time now im gonna meet a Vamp who's my uncle damn

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: you know Carl im happy you're my son ...the way im so proud of you

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: you have no idea

Carl: I wish mom and her family accepts me the way I am like you do

Ruslan: I accept you and im proud of you every day so fuck them and their crazy ugly asses

\*\*\*Carl laughed\*\*\*

Carl: imagine how they'll act if they knew im a wizard and also a son to a wizard....a nephew to a Vampire/wizard and a grandson to a witch

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: I don't even wanna imagine it

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Carl: ok dad let me go we'll talk later....Jeremy is here

Ruslan: mmmmh remember no rubber no play there's not cure for Aids yet

Carl: DAD!

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: bye

\*\*\*he ended the call still laughing and Thandi came out of the kitchen with her half eaten food on a plate and she stood there looking at him with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Thandi: im angry at you and wena o busy wa tshega tshega....mmmm go monate go ba wena neh ( and you are busy laughing....mmmh it's nice to be you I see)

\*\*\* she said all that with a disgusted look on her face then she walked passed him going to the lounge and Ruslan chuckled shaking his head and he followed her\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*\*NIGERIA\*\*\*\*

\*\*\* They finally got Mj out of that room and he was still shaking with his sweatpants wet from his pee...he was sitting on a chair and he was drinking water with his shaky hands holding the bottle....he put the bottle down and he wiped his tears off looking down then Jabu and Heath sat in front of him on their own chairs\*\*\*

Heath: did you grow some balls in there or should we put you back in

\*\*\*He quickly looked at him shaking his head\*\*\*

Mj: no...no bros abeg I've learned my lesson

Heath: have you really?

Mj: ye...yes...yes

\*\*\*he said nodding repeatedly\*\*\*

Heath: good

Jabu: Iwena tlogela go act(a) ekare o nyaope boy a tlhoka a fix man ( stop acting like a drug addict wanting a fix)

\*\*\*Heath laughed \*\*\*

Mj: bros not now ok abeg

Jabu: tsek o sa na le molomo le nou? ( you can still talk even now?)

Mj: mxm

Jabu: wetsetsa nna mxm? ( you're doing that mxm to me?)

Heath: mjava vag tuu ( Jabu wait please)

\*\*\*he said chuckling\*\*\*

Mj: im a man now bros so be careful or you'll regret it

Jabu: man ya go e thotela.... fotsek ( a man who pee on himself... piss off)

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Heath: I swear Mj will still talk even when he's dead....you should be quiet still scared about what you went through but no you're here locking horns with Jabu

Mj: im in a bad mood abeg so no vex me.....im sweating and I smell like shit so ya'll better leave me before someone loses his teeth ooo

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone then Jabu and Heath laughed looking at him\*\*\*

Jabu: o serious?

Mj: as a heart attack....i survived a heart attack in there so una no vex me im in a very bad mood

\*\*\*they laughed again\*\*\*

Jabu: mxm bona mo ntwana we all have phobias... ah ah die boy ( this boy)...gape a waya diheleng wa boya mna so chilexa (you didn't go to hell and came back so relax)

Mj: do you know how scary frogs are bros....besides the scary noises they make they are also scary as f...

Jabu: sampotsa ka digwagwa man a di tshose dilo tseo...mara wa jaja na gore rotwe e tshosa byang mmm? (don't tell me about frogs man those things are not scary...do you know how scary a rat is?)

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Mj: what's that

\*\*\*he asked confused\*\*\*

Heath: a big rat

Mj: mxm we eat giant rats as a delicacy here in Nigeria so abeg don't compare yourself with me

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: hei wena e seng a ko Alex aka Alexandra ....a le a ja lesega a le fetse le marapo a teng kao chaela ( hey not at that place called Alex aka Alexandra.... those rats eat a baby along with that baby's bones im telling you)

\*\*\*Heath laughed out loud\*\*\*

Jabu: heh I remember een dag maOulady a tswa stene a yo tlhoma mtlhatlhane ko Alex daar and a vaiya le nna (one day my mother went to look for her own place at a place called Alex she build a shack there and she left with me)

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Jabu: ....the following morning ke re ka tsoga ko shapa six-nine.... heh poi e rile ke bula matlho ka kereya rotwe next to my face on top of my pillow ntwana e gototse matlho ( I wanted to wake up and go take a piss....heh boy when I opened my eyes I found a huge rat next to my face on top of my pillow boy staring at me)

\*\*\*Heath and Mj laughed out loud\*\*\*

Jabu: ntwana ka goella e kare mei Oulady o bodile...I rile oulady a tsena a tlhaga ko ntle ankerka ke nametse pala that was in the middle of the room holding the roofing gore e sa wela...ke le ko dimo ntwana ke goela blaen (boy I screamed as if my mother was dead.....and when my mother walked in coming from outside she found me up on the roof holding on tight to a pole that was in the middle of the room holding the roof so it doesn't cave in.....i was up there screaming my lungs out)

\*\*\*they continued to laugh\*\*\*

Jabu: nako eo moroto le lephyega le reng mo ngwaneng ( I even peed and shit myself)

\*\*\*they continued to laugh their lungs out\*\*\*

Jabu: bona dai deng ne e le kana ( it was this big)

\*\*\*he said showing them its "supposed" size\*\*\*

Jabu: im sure ke utlwile ebile rotwe ela e bolela ( im sure I even heard that rat talk)

Heath&Mj: haaah

\*\*\* They said at the same time indicating that he was lying and Jabu laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: ka le chaela man....im sure e rile " ro re o mang byanong wena"( im telling ya'll....im sure it said " who are we going to say you are " )

\*\*\*they laughed out loud with Mj holding his stomach\*\*\*

Jabu: ntwana same day oulady ampusetsa ko magriza and I never went back there again until ouladay a movela to another place (boy same day my mother took me back to my granny's house and I never went back there again until my mother moved to another place)

\*\*\*they continued to laugh\*\*\*

Jabu: and that's when my phobia ya bo rotwe( of rats) started

Mj: how old were you

\*\*\*he said still laughing\*\*\*

Jabu: 13.....then ka ya danyaneng and ka kereya skoroponyana sa ko laundry ka mo gare ga danyane wa bona (then I went to jail and I found some job to keep me busy in there)

\*\*\*then he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Jabu: heh.....one day ke le busy ka daar ka tlosa a pile of dirty sheets and clothes mo gatshe ke re ko lokela ka mo mocheneng then boom ka kereya di rotwe tsei two di jana missionary style baba(one day when I was busy in there I removed a pile of dirty sheets and clothes on the floor as I wanted to put them inside the washing machine then boom I found two rats fucking missionary style)

\*\*\*Heath and Mj busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

Jabu: mfowethu gore ke blome daar and ke di bogele di jana while ke teskomora ka ja fatshe.....ke tswile ka daar ka 120 ke tshela 1 blaen..... ke bile ka stopa ke vader mo passaging( my brother instead of standing there and watch them fuck each other while I masturbate I ran.....i ran like my life depended on it....i only stopped when a warden stopped me on the passage) ..... worse part I didn't even know where I was running to

\*\*\*Mj was now on the floor laughing his ass out\*\*\*

Jabu: and erile ge ke fetsa go botsa dai bari gore why ke tsogile a laga blaen (and after telling that fool why I was shaking like that he laughed at me) and right there and then I told myself that I have to fight off that stupid phobia cause it made me look like a wimp so I went back there and even though the rats where gone I told myself that I'll never fear borotwe (rats)...haaah nou rotwe nyana a fete mopelaka ke e leragela kwa e be ke e roge ka mmayona wa sfebe le papa yona wa go rota ka pele ( now if a rat passes next to me I'll kick it away and also swear at it about its mother who's a bitch and its father who nut quickly)

Heath: whooah Jabu...whoah man....my stomach hurts man

\*\*\*he said laughing while holding his stomach...as for Mj he couldn't even speak tears were just running down his face as he laughed his ass off\*\*\*

Jabu: so wa bona ntwana (so you see boy) we did that for your own good

\*\*\*heath and Mj just continued to laugh\*\*\*

Jabu: ai man fetsang go laga re bolelele dilo tse serious ( finish laughing so we can talk some serious stuff)

\*\*\*they laughed until they stopped and Jabu gave them some time to calm down as he sat there with a smile on his face\*\*\*

Heath: wa bona wena Jabu you need to have your own comedy show....you need to go join Peter Mashata Mashabela Mashabela Sales man and others cause wa hlanya straight ( you are crazy straight)

Jabu: hai nka se loke mfowethu...ga pe nna ke hlanya nako eo eseng every day ( hai I won't survive it man cause I don't always act crazy)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Heath: yeah right

Jabu: kao chaela ( im telling you)

Mj: damn I should've recorded you

\*\*\*Anyway they talked to Mj and made him understand that he needs to grow up and set a good example for his nieces and nephews cause already Mpendulo and Sbu look up to him....they apologized for traumatizing him like that and they promised him that they'll make it up to him then they hugged it out\*\*\*

Mj: let's go I need a bath filled with warm water mixed with bleach

\*\*\*they laughed going to the car\*\*\*

Jabu: o reng moroto wa sbabo mongwaneng

\*\*\*they laughed with Mj busy chasing Jabu...then Heath smiled being thankful that Mj understood why they did what they did to him....he admits that it was extreme but they needed to really scare him for him to come down to earth....he was moving to South Africa in a few months' time so he needs him to be focused cause their enemies might use him to get to them and he can't stomach the thought of anything bad happening to him or any of his family members all because of his childish behavior....he just wanted to toughen him a bit\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*\* MENZI'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

Menzi: are you sure you're ok

\*\*\*He asked Kazi who seemed lost in thoughts they were having breakfast the following morning...she was thinking about what Castiel said to her She wanted to think that

maybe he was kidding but the seriousness of his voice made her think that he might be serious\*\*\*

Kazi: yeah it's just one of those days you know

\*\*\*Menzi sighed\*\*\*

Menzi: im here for you if you want to talk ok

\*\*\*She nodded smiling a bit\*\*\*

Menzi: so what time are you knocking off?

Kazi: angazi ( I don't know) maybe around six

Menzi: uyahlanya! ( you're mad!)

\*\*\*She laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: I knew you'd say that mxm

\*\*\*He smiled looking at her\*\*\*

Kazi: what?

Menzi: nex its just I can't believe you're mine

\*\*\*she looked at him with a raised eyebrow\*\*\*

Kazi: I didn't know I was yours mina

\*\*\*He chuckled picking his phone that indicated that he just received a message\*\*\*

Menzi: you can act clueless all you like sthandwa sam but deep down you know ukuthi ungowami ( that you're mine)

\*\*\*she laughed and he opened the message and read it and immediately the smile that was on his face vanished slowly\*\*\*

Kazi: is everything ok?

\*\*\*he cleared his throat getting up\*\*\*



Menzi: yeah its work.....I need to make a quick call I'll be right back ok

\*\*\*She nodded and he went over to her and kissed her forehead and he walked away dialing the numbers that send that message to him and it send him straight to voice mail and he clicked his tongue.....he then called his IT boy\*\*\*

Guy: boss

Menzi: Fingers I just received a message on my phone a minute or so ago and I want you to trace the numbers for me asap

Fingers: sure bozza

\*\*\*then he ended the call and he went back to Kazi\*\*\*

Kazi: you ok

Menzi: yeah

\*\*\*he kissed her cheek and sat down and he continued to eat his breakfast with a worried look on his face then his phone rang after some time and it was Fingers\*\*\*

Menzi: talk to me

Fingers: the numbers are from a burner phone boss so I can't trace them

Menzi: damn it!

\*\*\*He sighed\*\*\*

Menzi: its ok shap

\*\*\*he ended the call and when he looked up he found Kazi looking at him\*\*\*

Menzi: it's a work thing sthandwa sam but I'll sort it out don't worry

\*\*\*She sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: ok...I just hope it's nothing bad cause I can't handle a moody Menzi

\*\*\*Menzi chuckled\*\*\*

Menzi: aow since when because the last time I checked you could handle a moody me

Kazi: I was kidnapped Mapholoba so im very fragile

\*\*\*Menzi smiled wide and he leaned forward\*\*\*

Menzi: say my clan name again

\*\*\*She blushed\*\*\*

Kazi: hai suka...lets finish up so we can go

Menzi: ngiyakcela sthandwa sam....please

\*\*\*she giggled\*\*\*

Kazi: Mapholoba...happy now

\*\*\*He chuckled\*\*\*

Menzi: more than you'll ever know and from now on call me that

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: you should stop calling me Sthandwa sakho cause usaseskhathini sokulila man  
Menzi ( you should stop calling me your love cause you're still in a mourning period)

\*\*\*he gave her a bored look\*\*\*

Menzi: ungazong'bora Ntandokazi.... ekseni kangaka pho

\*\*\*He said with a woman's voice and she laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: anyway let's go tuu

Menzi: ujugeleni ( why are you in a hurry)

Kazi: dude I haven't been in my salon for quite a while now

\*\*\*She said standing up\*\*\*

Menzi: ubani udude Ntandokazi? ( who are you calling a dude Ntandokazi)

\*\*\*she laughed clearing the table and he got up and held her in place as she laughed\*\*\*

Menzi: ubani udude ( who are you calling a dude)

Kazi: no one now let me go

\*\*\*He then tickled her smiling and she laughed out loud trying to get off his hold\*\*\*

Kazi: MENZI...MENZI MAN STO...STOPPP

Menzi: ubani udude? ( who are you calling a dude)

\*\*\*he said still smiling as he tickled her\*\*\*

Kazi: im sorry...you're not a dude...you're not... please stoppp....i'll pee on myself man  
Menzi stoppp

\*\*\*He stopped and she hit him on his chest laughing and he held her hands and looked at her\*\*\*

Menzi: call me dude again and I'll tickle you until you pee on yourself ok

\*\*She tried to put up a serious face but she failed\*\*\*

Kazi: fine mxm

\*\*\*she tried to wiggle out of his hold but he kept her in place and he cupped her face with his right hand and he kissed her lips slowly she kissed him back and after some time they pulled out from the kiss and he looked into her eyes and she looked down shyly\*\*\*

Menzi: I love you Ntandokazi i may not be a perfect man but ngiyakthanda ( I love you)

\*\*\*she sighed and looked at him\*\*\*

Menzi: just give us a chance and I'll make you the happiest woman on earth...Please sthandwa sam

Kazi: you're still in mourning Menzi....can we talk about this after your mourning period....please

Menzi: mourning period yani Ntandokazi....i was cleansed hao

Kazi: married people stay about a year mourning for their spouses Menzi

Menzi: uyahlanya ( you are crazy).... a year yani....you want my dick to shrink neh

Kazi: ah ah

\*\*\*She said shocked\*\*\*

Menzi: hey angeke ngizilele omunye umfazi mina ( I won't mourn for another woman) while I sleep next to the one that holds my heart never!

Kazi: but it's for your own good Mapholoba and she was your wife not just any woman

Menzi: look you can call me Mapholoba all you want kodwa I was cleansed and im clean so mina nawe siyajola ksuka manje ( you and I are dating from now on)

\*\*\*She just looked at him shocked and he perked her lips and helped her clear the table\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*\*AT KAZI'S SALON\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*she walked in and she immediately stopped she wanted to turn back cause the place she just walked in looked nothing like hers....she frowned with her heart beating fast then she spotted her employees busy doing peoples hair and nails and she just stood there with her jaws hanging\*\*\*

Lady: OMG BOSS LADY!

\*\*\*one of her employees said rushing to her and she hugged her\*\*\*

Lady: OMG I can't believe you're here....when we heard about your kidnapping we were devastated

\*\*\*they all rushed to her and hugged her\*\*\*

Janet: don't worry I'll explain the revamp

\*\*\*the lady that manages her business when she's not around said seeing that Kazi was shocked by the complete revamp of her salon\*\*\*

Kazi: ok..ok...ok we will catch up later now back to work please

\*\*\*she said coming back from her shock and they all went back to their customers with smiles on their faces not believing that she was actually here alive.....then Kazi went to her office with Janet following her and as soon as the door to her office opened she froze\*\*\*

Janet: you like it boss lady?

\*\*\*Kazi looked around and walked in slowly then she turned and looked at Janet\*\*\*

Kazi: who... I mean I was still saving up for a revamp so who did this... I mean who paid for all this

Janet: Mr Ngcobo did when you were still missing

\*\*\*she went and sat down on her new leather office chair and she exhaled loudly not believing all this\*\*\*

Kazi: wow ummm and he never said anything since I came back

Janet: im sure he wanted to surprise you

\*\*\*she said smiling and Kazi sighed feeling emotional cause the place looked beautiful it looked like one of those expensive salons\*\*\*

Kazi: I can't believe he did this

\*\*\*She said with a low tone\*\*\*

Janet: you better hold on to him boss lady he's a keeper....anyway let me give you some time to regroup and I'll come back and fill you in on everything

Kazi: ummm yeah...thanks

Janet: umm before I go can I get you anything....Coffee juice or tea

Kazi: umm no thanks maybe later

Janet: ok and just so you know we even have a small kitchen which have a coffee machine microwave and a new fridge

\*\*\*she giggled and walked out and Kazi sighed then she took her phone and dialed Menzi with tears running down her cheeks\*\*\*

Menzi: you like it

\*\*\* she sniffed wiping her falling tears\*\*\*

Menzi: sthandwa sam...Ntandokazi?

Kazi: ye..yes I like it in fact I love it...Thank you Mapholoba

\*\*\*he breathed out\*\*\*

Menzi: im glad you do

Kazi: but you do know you didn't have to right

Menzi: I know but I wanted to

Kazi: well thank you.....so since I didn't ask you to go bankrupt because of me do I have to pay you back

Menzi: ungazongihlanyela Ntandokazi ( don't piss me off Ntandokazi)

\*\*\*She laughed\*\*\*

Menzi: the only thing you can do for me is agree to being mine and mine alone qa

\*\*\*she blushed\*\*\*

Kazi: mmmmh qeda ngesikhathi sakho sokulila ( finish with your mourning period) then I'll thank you properly...how's that?

Menzi: you serious?

Kazi: as a heart attack

\*\*\*Menzi laughed sounding excited\*\*\*

Menzi: ok but just so you know I was cleansed....anyway let me get back to work we will finish up with this conversation later at home

Kazi: ok

Menzi: ngiyakthanda uyezwa ( I love you)

\*\*\*she bit her lower lip\*\*\*

Kazi: yeah ngiyezwa ( I hear you)

\*\*\*he laughed and ended the call then she breathed out and looked up smiling then she froze....Castiel was standing by the closed door with a pissed off look on his face\*\*\*

Kazi: how...how did you get in...I ....i didn't hear the door op...

Castiel: I snuck in

\*\*\*He said dismissing her then he locked the door and walked to her as she stood up feeling uneasy....in fact she was scared\*\*\*

Castiel: I won't hurt you so relax

\*\*\*he sat on the edge of the table facing her\*\*\*

Castiel: sit!

\*\*\*she slowly sat down and he looked at her with a serious look on her face\*\*\*

Kazi: what...what are you doing here?

Castiel: I see you thought I was joking when I told you not to let that boy touch you

\*\*\*Kazi swallowed hard and she breathed out and she gained the courage and she pulled a straight face\*\*\*

Kazi: first of all im not yours Castiel or whatever your name is and secondly you won't tell me what to do or who to date or let alone tell me that I shouldn't let another man touch me where else you're nothing to me

\*\*\*he raised an eyebrow looking at her\*\*\*

Castiel: im nothing to you huh?

\*\*\*she just looked at him\*\*\*

Castiel: so you don't find me attractive?...or you don't wish to taste how my lips tastes like? or you don't wish to feel my strong arms around your sexy body?

\*\*\*He said as he remembered how she thought of him that time they met while she was shopping and she swallowed hard with her eyes slightly popped out and her jaws hanging a bit cause now she was thinking of his cologne how good it smells and how good looking he is even though she was a bit scared of him\*\*\*

Castiel: you don't want me Charlotte?

\*\*\*she blinked fast as she tried to compose herself also surprised that he knew her other name\*\*\*

Castiel: answer me

Kazi: no I...i don't

Castile: is it?

\*\*\*he said as he raised his eyebrow at her in a cute way with a slight smirk on his face\*\*\*

Kazi: yes now can you leave

\*\*\*he chuckled and he moved and leaned over to her face.....their faces were inches away from each other\*\*\*

Kazi: what...what are you doing?

\*\*\*she asked with a low tone\*\*\*

Castiel: do you wanna know why I say you're mine Charlotte.....



\*\*\*she swallowed hard looking at him\*\*\*

Castiel: it's because I can make you wet without even touching you

\*\*\*she gasped\*\*\*

Kazi: can...can you just leave Castiel...please

Castiel: your mind says one thing and your mouth is saying another thing Charlotte.....so which one is it...to fuck you here and now or to leave?

\*\*\*she swallowed hard wondering how he knew what she was thinking.... she frowned looking at him with her mind now all over the place...." HOW THE FUCK DID HE KNOW?" is what she thought\*\*\*

Castiel: I know cause im one of the blessed ones in this world now im waiting for my answer Charlotte

\*\*\*he said smirking and he leaned closer and stared into her eyes and she stared back too trying to keep his gaze but she failed and she looked away with her heart pounding hard\*\*\*

Castiel: you know I can fuck you hard now and you'll cum all over this table shaking like a leaf

\*\*\*her breath hitched as she became wet instantly and he got closer to a point that their noses nearly touched\*\*\*

Castiel: or I can eat your pussy up so hard that you end up coming all over my face hard with your body shaking like a leaf

\*\*\*she swallowed hard closing her thighs tight as she felt her lace thong getting wetter by the second\*\*\*

Castiel: no open them why are you closing them huh?

\*\*\*her chest was now moving up and down as she was breathing hard\*\*\*

Castiel: I said open them Charlotte

\*\*\*she swallowed hard again and she opened her thighs slowly\*\*\*

Castiel: so which one is it Charlotte....what do you want me to do?

\*\*\*she just sat there swallowing hard repeatedly as if something was stuck on her throat\*\*\*

Castiel: im already hard as fuck all I need to do is put you on top of this table with your legs wide open and I'll just pull your underwear aside or I'll just rip it off and slide in my dick inside your juicy wet pussy and let your pussy walls hug my gigantic cock as I stand there not moving an inch letting you get used to it and when I decide to finally move baby you'll call all your clan names word by word until an electrifying orgasm wash over your entire body and you'll scream out loud like a person who's seeing a ghost....and from there on I'll fuck your brains out until you pass out

\*\*\*she gasped as she released her juices on her underwear and her thighs shook as her bottom lip trembled\*\*\*

Castiel: you'll pass out and wake up and you'll still find me fucking you good

Kazi: sto...stop....

\*\*\*he smirked as he watched her catching her breath and he leaned back and he stood up straight and the visible bulge on his jeans was evident enough that he was packing pretty well down there\*\*\*

Castiel: mmmmh and you're wearing a skirt nc nc nc

\*\*\*\*he said moving to the other side of the table and he fixed his bulge and he looked at Kazi who was trying to compose herself now feeling extremely embarrassed\*\*\*

Castiel: now you see why I say you're mine Charlotte.....i can make you cum without touching you so image what I can do as I held you in place fucking you good with deep strokes as I go in and out of you nice and slow

Kazi: Castiel ple..please don...jeez stop talking

\*\*\*he chuckled and he went to the door and he stopped and turned and he had a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Castiel: this is your first strike Charlotte....

\*\*\*He then unlocked and opened the door\*\*\*

Castiel: don't forget to clean yourself up.

\*\*\*he got out closing the door behind him\*\*\*

Kazi: Jesus Christ

\*\*\*she said looking between her legs with her heart still pounding hard against her chest\*\*\*

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

INSERT.....18

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*After Kazi cleaned herself up she called Janet in and Janet briefed her on everything and went back to work after that...right then her phone rang it was her cousin Phumi and she answered\*\*\*

Kazi: babe hey

Phumi: hey hey...how's you bathong

Kazi: ngiright wena ( im alright and you)

Phumi: im always super you know that so are you ready to host me mogirl

\*\*\*Kazi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: ofcourse... yho I miss you

Phumi: I miss you too babe so im gonna take the morning bus so I'll arrive there go sa le early neh

Kazi: so o serious you'll never catch a flight

Phumi: never... I don't want it to explode with me inside yho I cant shem....i mean don't even have kids babe so I need to leave a little Phumiyana wa maminanyana( a little Phumi with some snorts on her face) before I die

\*\*\*Kazi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: gosh Phumelele mara

Phumi: yho hai leave me tuu....anyway let me go back to work we will talk later ok

Kazi: ok shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and Kazi laughed shaking her head.....well she wanted to buy a plane ticket for her but she blatantly refused cause she said she doesn't want it to explode in the sky with her inside\*\*\*

LATER IN THE EVENING AT MENZI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*they were having supper and Kazi's mind was far she was playing with her food around the plate and Menzi could see something was bothering her\*\*\*

Menzi: sthandwa sam

Kazi: mmmmh

Menzi: what's wrong?

Kazi: mmmmh

Menzi: KAZI!

\*\*\*he said raising his voice and she snapped out of it\*\*\*

Kazi: ye...yes?

Menzi: where's your mind at?

\*\*\*he asked with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Kazi: umm.... its here

Menzi: don't make a fool Ntandokazi I can see something serious is occupying your mind....what's wrong?

Kazi: ummm its nothing Mapholoba...I just can't stop thinking about my renovated salon

\*\*\*she lied she was thinking about what Castiel did to her earlier on she couldn't believe that actually happened to her and now she wondered how he is in bed if he can make her cum without touching her.... Anyway Menzi gave her an intense look and she looked down feeling guilty\*\*\*

Kazi: ummm also that.... that you're good for me....I was asking myself why im giving you such a tough time cause i know I still love you and i...I want to be with you so I was just asking myself questions nje

\*\*\*She thought of a good enough lie quickly\*\*\*

Menzi: what questions?

\*\*\* "ooh God" she thought\*\*\*

Kazi: that do I want to wait or to just go with the flow you know..... I mean life is too short and tonight might be my last or your last and I don't want any regrets Menzi...eish I don't know if I make sense

Menzi: what regrets Ntandokazi?

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: of giving you a chance...of giving us a chance

\*\*\*Menzi breathed out and he looked at her\*\*\*

Menzi: ufuna ukthini Ntandokazi ( what are you trying to say Ntandokazi)

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Kazi: that no more waiting....no more playing hard to get....i love you Menzi and I want to...to be with you

\*\*\*Menzi face changed and you could see he was getting emotional\*\*\*

Menzi: you mean that Ntandokazi?

Kazi: yeah

\*\*\*she said nodding and he got up and went to her and pulled her up....he just cupped her face looking into her eyes with nothing but love\*\*\*

Menzi: I love you

\*\*\*she swallowed\*\*\*

Kazi: I love you too Menzi

\*\*\*he leaned in and they kissed passionately....after some time they pulled out of the kiss and he kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Menzi: ngiyakthanda yezwa ( I love you you hear me)

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Kazi: nami ngiyakthanda yezwa( I love you too you hear me)

\*\*\*they both laughed then she bit her lower lip\*\*\*

Kazi: im ready

\*\*\*he raised an eyebrow\*\*\*

Menzi: ready?

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Kazi: please ....ummm....make love to me Mapholoba

\*\*\*Menzi looked at her with his eyes popped out then he composed himself and he breathed out\*\*\*

Menzi: are you sure?

\*\*\*she nodded biting her lower lip and he licked his lips and he leaned in and they kissed again.....soon the kiss got heated and Menzi grabbed her butt cheeks and he lifted her up and she wrapped her legs around his waist with her hands around his neck and he went to the bedroom with her as they kissed hungrily\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*He entered her slowly and stopped moving as he clenched his jaws while Kazi moaned digging her nails into his flesh on his back\*\*\*

Menzi: fuck I missed you Ntandokazi....i fucken missed you

\*\*\*he bend down and they kissed with him moving slowly missionary style while she wrapped her legs around his waist\*\*\*

Kazi: mmmmh

\*\*\*she moaned as they kissed then her mind went to Castiel and what he did to her earlier but he was brought back to her senses when he increased his pace and that made her to moan louder\*\*\*

Kazi: fuck Ca....Menzi fuck!

\*\*\*she said as she felt nothing but pure pleasure as he went deeper...as for Menzi he increased his pace thrusting in and out of her \*\*\*

Menzi: look at me Ntandokazi

\*\*\*she did moaning while biting her lower lip\*\*\*

Menzi: I love you yezwa

\*\*\*she nodded and he went deeper and she groaned\*\*\*

Kazi: fuck baby!

\*\*\*he smirked and dropped on top of her and he held her with his head buried on her neck\*\*\*

Menzi: drop your legs baby

\*\*\*she did and she opened them wider and he started fucking her going faster and she lost her mind..... he went in and out of her as he groaned and his sexy groans drove her insane\*\*\*

Kazi: ooh yes Mapholoba...yes baby fuck me harder baby!

\*\*\*she said and he lost his mind....his hands immediately went to her ass and he grabbed it tight pulling her lower body up a bit and he went deeper and faster and that's when an unexpected orgasm hit her and she screamed and yep Mapholoba fucked her through it.....well after a few thrusts he went in and out of her faster groaning loud and she knew he was near so she held his tight and he went faster and faster then he slammed into her and he groaned loud pushing his dick deeper and deeper then he cursed and stayed on that position for some time trying to catch his breath then he pulled himself up and he slid out and he watched as his juices dripped from her nana on to the bed and her hand went to her pussy and she smeared them all over her pussy moaning and he bit his lower lips then he bend and perked her lips....he got out of bed and he went to the bathroom and he came back with a wet towel and he cleaned her he then got out of bed again and he pulled her to the edge of the bed where he stood\*\*\*

Kazi: shit baby.....

\*\*\*She said with a low tone\*\*\*

Menzi: im not yet done with you sthandwa sam....

\*\*\*he said as he stood between her legs with his semi hard dick and he opened them wide and he positioned himself\*\*\*

Menzi: ngiyakthanda yezwa ( I love you)

\*\*\*she nodded and he slid in and he groaned while she moaned\*\*\*

Menzi: damn I swear your pussy will be my downfall sthandwa sam

\*\*\*he started moving and she continued to moan loud while holding on the bedcovers as he fucked her.....well he fucked her good until a violent orgasm hit her and he stopped moving and he pulled out then turned her around with her body still shaking from the orgasm and he slid in from the back with his left hand holding her natural hair and his right hand holding her waist tight and he continued fucking her deep and fast as she



held on to the bedcovers screaming her lungs out cause nigga was tearing her nana apart but the pleasure she was also feeling was just out of this world....

Well the second round lasted longer and by the time he was done with her she couldn't feel her pussy and she was even struggling to keep her eyes open but Menzi wasn't done cause he was still hard so after cleaning her up he pushed her to the middle of the bed and turned her on lay on her back and he slid in her missionary style again and fucked her brains out\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*In the early hours of the morning she woke up to Menzi sliding in her and she flinched cause she was sore down there..... he then started thrusting in and out of her and she moaned out loud as soon as the pain disappeared he then he pulled her legs up putting them on his shoulders and he started moving in and out of her slowly\*\*\*

Kazi: Gosh Menzi....

Menzi: yes baby

\*\*\*he said as he increased his pace a bit and she moaned louder holding tight to his arms\*\*\*

Menzi: ahhh.... ahhh.... ahhh...damn baby!

\*\*\*that's what he said with his bold voice as he enjoyed her wet nana.... he went faster hitting the right spot and an unexpected orgasm hit her and she screamed shaking and he didn't stop he went harder chasing his own happy ending and after a few thrusts he slammed into her pushing himself deeper and he groaned from deep down his throat and he cursed\*\*\*

Menzi: FUCK....

\*\*\*he dropped her legs and bends down and perked her lips\*\*\*

Menzi: fuck that was good sthandwa sam

\*\*\*she smiled at him lazily and she just closed her eyes and he pulled out and he went between her legs and kissed her pussy and took the towel and wiped both of them....he then laid next to her and pulled her closer and she rested her head on his hard chest and they both fell asleep....

Now they both just finished getting ready for work but before they went to shower Kazi woke up to Menzi having her in a spooning position and after they were done they went to shower and had another round in there....as for Kazi her nana was still numb and she hoped that she'll be able to walk properly and not like someone who still has an invisible dick between her legs\*\*\*

Menzi: you sure you'll be able to concentrate today at work

\*\*\*He said teasing her and she laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: leave me tuu

\*\*\*he chuckled looking happy....it was like a huge weight was lifted off his shoulders he felt light and happy....the way he's happy you wouldn't even miss the smile that is plastered on his face....he was like a small child who was just given candy it was just cute to watch him like that\*\*\*

Kazi: so you gonna smile like that the whole day?

\*\*\*he pulled her closer and perked her lips\*\*\*

Menzi: im a happy man sthandwa sam and today my employees are gonna see that

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: what did my pussy do to you Mapholoba....i mean I've never seen you this happy

\*\*\*he sighed and he put his forehead on hers and they stayed like that for some time\*\*\*

Menzi: you know sthandwa sam when you were abducted...

\*\*\*he sighed and pulled his head back and he looked into her eyes\*\*\*

Menzi: I almost lost my mind....i didn't know what to do with myself....i swear beksele kancane nje ukuthi ngihlanye ngamapela ( it was just a matter of time before I lost my mind for real)

\*\*\*he sighed and she wrapped her arms around his waist looking up at him\*\*\*

Menzi: and when I saw you lying in that hospital bed after they left you outside the police station I vowed that I'll live the rest of my life making you happy.....i vowed that I'll wife you and grow old with you and our kids

\*\*\*Kazi became emotional thinking about Castiel and what he did to her....she felt guilty like she cheated on Menzi\*\*\*

Kazi: I love you Mapholoba

\*\*\*he perked her lips\*\*\*

Menzi: I love you too sthandwa sam....so when will Phumi arrive this side

Kazi: I don't know but she said she will communicate with me so if she doesn't get me on my phone she's call you ok

Menzi: ok let's go eat I have a meeting out of town

\*\*\*then Kazi's phone beeped indicating that a message came through and she opened and read it and the message says:

"I see you thought I was joking when I said don't let that boy touch what's mine and now you let him fuck you nc nc nc "

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Menzi: you ok?

Kazi: arg yah....lets go babe

\*\*\*they walked out\*\*\*

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Mbali: but dad I miss her she can't just abandon me like this

\*\*\*She said sulking \*\*\*

Pops: ma would never abandon you princess right now she's busy touring the world with her husband before their ancestors remember them haw

\*\*\* he lied and she sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: I know im being silly and childish about this but I just miss her so much daddy

Pops: I know baby I miss her too

\*\*\*she was talking to her father on the phone....she was sulking cause she couldn't get hold of her grandmother and Pops lied to her by saying Ma and baba are traveling the world but in actually fact she's undergoing chemotherapy overseas she didn't want her grandchildren know about it cause she knew they'll leave their families and businesses to come and be with her but more especially stress about her and she doesn't want that her son and husband knowing was enough for her to keep fighting hard\*\*\*

Pops: tell you what I'll call baba and tell him to tell ma to call you how's that

Mbali: but why can't I call him myself

Pops: tjeeerrr who's child are you Princess

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: yours haw

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: I miss you daddy

Pops: I miss you too my princess....so how's the little one treating you

Mbali: he's behaving if you know what I mean

\*\*\*she said and chuckled\*\*\*

Pops: you know im not happy with the fact that you know about his demon and Ray's demon too

Mbali: well I know about your beast so you happy with me knowing that daddy

Pops: don't get smart with me young lady

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: look now I know that the world is not as black and white as everyone thinks it is dad and that every family has their own secrets and im glad I know about my family secrets cause they opened my eyes and now I can see clearly and im not that naïve little girl anymore

\*\*\*Pops sighed \*\*\*

Mbali: don't worry daddy even if I grow old with grey hair I'll always be your little girl....i'll always sulk to you and cry to you so you haven't lost me and you'll never lose me ok

Pops: I love you baby

\*\*\*he said with an emotional voice\*\*\*

Mbali: I love you too daddy....

\*\*\*then she heard someone speaking with a foreign language\*\*\*

Pops: I have to go baby I'll let baba know ok

Mbali: ok dad

\*\*\*they ended the call and she sighed\*\*\*

Ray: are you really as grown as you claim you are

\*\*\*she turned and found him standing behind her\*\*\*

Mbali: yep

Ray: really....so what you did to me and my things is you acting like a grown up?

Mbali: nope that was me acting like a scorned angry mad black woman

\*\*\*he looked at her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Mbali: and that wasn't me disrespecting you nooo because I know one more hard slap from you will land me in hospital this time and if Saint "the demon" try to fight for me La Parca will send him to hell along with my son's soul since they are attached to one another so I wasn't trying to disrespect you I was just lashing out

\*\*\*He just looked at her...there was something different about her I was just lashing out

\*\*\*He just looked at her...there was something different about her that innocent and childish vibe she used to give was gone\*\*\*

Ray: lashing out you say?

\*\*\*she nodded and Ray came around and he sat down not far from her\*\*\*

Ray: so every time I fuck up you'll...."lash out"

Mbali: nope but every time you cheat on me I'll..."lash out" and be rest assured that I'll leave no stone unturned my love

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: is that so?

Mbali: yep

Ray: mmmm

Mbali: so....do you still love me or your love for me died with your Maserati and expensive whiskey

\*\*\*he didn't say anything he just looked at her siting back\*\*\*

Mbali: ohk

\*\*\*she got up feeling disappointed and hurt and she started walking away but he stopped her\*\*\*

Ray: come here

\*\*\*she stopped swallowed and turned to look at him\*\*\*

Ray: come here jorr!

\*\*\*she sighed and walked to him and he pulled her to sit on his lap facing him then he squeezed her ass\*\*\*

Ray: you should know I'll never stop loving you my flower

\*\*\*she smiled\*\*\*

Mbali: you haven't called me your flower in a while now

Ray: and whose fault is it

Mbali: yours haw

Ray: my fault?...mxm you dey mad ( you're crazy)

\*\*\*she laughed and he wrapped his arm around her pulling her closer and he kissed her lips....she smiled kissing him back and he chuckled and stopped kissing her\*\*\*

Ray: couldn't you wait until we done kissing before you can grin like that

\*\*\*she giggled shaking her head\*\*\*

Mbali: no...I haven't felt your lips on mine in a while now so the kiss was a bit ticklish

\*\*\*Ray laughed\*\*\*

Ray: and she says she's a grown ass woman now

Mbali: mxm

\*\*\*she said pushing him but he tightened the grip around her\*\*\*

Ray: im sorry I hurt you my flower....im sorry I made you cry

\*\*\*she sighed and rested her head between his neck and shoulder\*\*\*

Mbali: and im sorry I disrespected you but im not sorry for "lashing out " though

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: do you know how much that Maserati and whiskey cost my flower

Mbali: im sure you know how priceless my heart is angithi (right) and you broke it

\*\*\*He sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: so there's nothing that you own that will amount to you comparing that thing or things to my broken heart

\*\*he didn't say anything\*\*\*

Mbali: but im over all that so I need you to do me a favour for me to be really really really over all that

\*\*\*she said raising her head to look at him\*\*\*

Ray: im listening?

Mbali: I need you to set up a meeting with that bitch called Selinah or Celine whatever her name is

\*\*\*his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Ray: what?

Mbali: mmmmh I need to have a small talk with her woman to woman

\*\*\*Ray shook his head\*\*\*

Ray: not happening

Mbali: you do know I can make the meeting happen without you my love angithi

\*\*\*he gave her an intense look\*\*\*

Mbali: please man Ray....please do it for me

Ray: it's not happening Mbali...that woman is dangerous and I told you that I don't want you involved in any way with anyone from the underworld



Mbali: please.....

\*\*\*she said giving him her puppy dog eyes\*\*\*

Ray: those puppy dog eyes won't work this time...

Mbali: don't make me blackmail you into setting up the meeting baby

\*\*\*He raised his eyebrow looking at her and she tried to keep a straight face but she ended up laughing\*\*\*

Mbali: sthandwa sam please....you can be present if you want I just want to talk to her that's all

Ray: talk to her about what?

Mbali: this and that...look I want to make it clear to her that she should keep her beef with you away from my marriage that's all

\*\*\*she lied....what she planned for her was....yeah I can't even say it\*\*\*

Ray: if that's all then I'll make sure she gets the message

Mbali: baby please im begging you just set up the meeting tuu

Ray: I said no Mbali!

Mbali: mxm fine then I'll find another way to meet up with her

\*\*\*she said trying to get off him and he tightened the grip around her\*\*\*

Ray: where do you think you're going?

Mbali: im not talking to you so let me go

\*\*\*she said faking a sulk and she tried to get out of his hold but he held her tight\*\*\*

Ray: really now

Mbali: yeah

\*\*\*she said looking away and he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: I can see you're faking a sulk my flower.....i know your real sulking-face so drop the act

\*\*\*a smile forced its way on her face\*\*\*

Mbali: mxm...Ray please I just wanna talk to her

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ray: fine I'll think about it

Mbali: ok but don't take too long or I'll find other means to set up the meeting

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ray: I did mention she's dangerous Mbali and she also has a foul mouth and she's manipulative and conniving

Mbali: and you're forgetting im a mother to a demon and a wife to La Parca's carrier

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Mbali: these women need to know that im not a walk-over Ray or one of those spoiled rotten wives....i can kick ass and I also have a foul mouth too

Ray: which women?

Mbali: those stupid women you do business with

\*\*\*he laughed not believing that this was his flower\*\*\*

Mbali: mmmmh your cheating ways unleashed a beast in me so qaphela ndoda ( be careful man)

Ray: wait what did you say in Zulu?

Mbali: Google it!

\*\*\*she said laughing and he tickled her and she screamed while laughing\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Kazi went to pick Phumi up and they went to the mall to buy groceries for Phumi since she refused to stay with Menzi and Kazi in Menzi's house she said she likes walking around in her underwear especially in the morning so she doesn't want to tempt Menzi she also said she doesn't want to listen to them fucking every night while she left her boyfriend back home so she's gonna stay at Kazi's house during her visit... Well Phumi was a beautiful woman she was a chubby girl but not too chubby she has smooth caramel skin with nicely cut short hair...all in all she was the younger version of Jill Scott ( the singer and actress) she has that million dollar smile Jill Scott has and her nice and sweet but fierce when she's pissed voice was the cherry on top \*\*\*

Phumi: hai wena you mean to tell me ukuthi nigga made you cum without touching or fucking you

Kazi: yep

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Phumi: ithi uyadlala Kazi ( say you kidding Kazi)

Kazi: im dead serious Phumi and the bulge below his belt was a clear indication ukuthi hey nigga uthwele inkunzimalanga (he's packing)

\*\*\*they busted out with laughter\*\*\*

Phumi: Jezos!

\*\*\*they continued laughing\*\*\*

Kazi: im telling you Phumza....i was dripping down there I had to work the rest of the day without wearing underwear cause it was papnut (wet)

Phumi: so what about bae wa diwheelbarrow ( the wheelbarrow bae)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: well we made it official last night and nigga fucked me good shem

Phumi: heh Kazi o deal(a) le bo bae ba diwheelbarrow le dimagician mmmh...thatha wena girl ( you deal with wheelbarrow bae and a magician...its nice to be you girl)

\*\*\*Kazi pushed Phumi and they laughed...they moved along picking things from the shelves\*\*\*

Kazi: well truth is I love Menzi and with Castiel well all I can say is I'd give anything to have him for one night nje.....Phumza you should have seen his bulge and when he was looking into my eyes and talking dirty to me it was like he was speaking to my soul

\*\*\*Phumi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: his eyes are creepy but yesterday they were the sexiest shit ever

\*\*\*they both laughed as they moved along\*\*\*

Phumi: so do you love the guy?

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: I don't know...I'll decide after having sex with him

Phumi: hah Kazi

\*\*\*Kazi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: im kidding jeez....yho Menzi would kill me if he finds out...I think its lust im feeling for him but yeses nigga is handsome and he's packing

Phumi: ai shem wa bona wena I'll pray for you shem ( I'll pray for you shame)

Kazi: please pray for me tuu....i think bayangithakatha ( I think they are bewitching me)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Voice: lust huh?

\*\*\*they both turned and Kazi's eyes popped out while Phumi just frowned\*\*\*

Kazi: Ca...Castiel

Castiel: I see you two fucked huh... well I hope you enjoyed yourself

\*\*\* " ohh shit he heard us" she thought and Castiel chuckled as he read her mind\*\*\*

Phumi: Castiel as in...

\*\*\*She whispered to Kazi and she nodded and she faked a smile looking at Castiel who had a frown on his face...he was looking at Phumi trying to read her mind but he couldn't...Phumi saw that he was looking at her with an intense look and she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Phumi: jeez no need to give me that look I'll give you two some privacy

\*\*\*She said and she pushed their trolley away but Castiel still kept his gaze at her until Kazi cleared her throat\*\*\*

Castiel: who is she?

Kazi: my cousin...why?

\*\*\*she said frowning\*\*\*

Castiel: mmm

\*\*\*then he went after her leaving Kazi standing there\*\*\*

Castiel: hey

\*\*\*she turned\*\*\*

Phumi: hi

Castiel: have we met before?

\*\*\*he said as he tried to read her mind and still nothing it was like she was immune to his abilities\*\*\*

Phumi: I doubt it

\*\*\*she said and she looked over at Kazi and Kazi had a displeased look on her face\*\*\*

Castiel: don't worry about her she made a wrong choice now she needs to live with it

Phumi: huh?

Castiel: anyway are both your parents South African?

Phumi: askies

Castiel: just answer me jeez!

Phumi: hei don't give me that attitude ok....i don't know you and you don't me and I don't have to answer any of your questions nx

\*\*\*He kept on looking at her trying to read her mind and still nothing was happening \*\*\*

Castiel: can you just answer me

Kazi: what's going on here

Phumi: ask your boyfriend here...he's acting weird and asking me stupid questions

\*\*\*She said and pushed her trolley and Castiel's eyes were still glued on her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Kazi: Cass

\*\*\*He looked at her\*\*\*

Castiel: what?

\*\*\*she swallowed\*\*\*

Kazi: why are you looking at Phumi like that?

\*\*\* " her name is Phumi...mmmmh interesting" he thought\*\*\*

Castiel: what is it to you?

\*\*\*she gasped\*\*\*

Kazi: she's my cousin for God's sake

Castiel: so?

\*\*\*she looked at him shocked then he walked away leaving her standing like a statue....and he took out his phone and called Ruslan\*\*\*

Ruu: Cass

Castiel: Madou something weird just happened now

Ruslan: no greetings you just started with the matter at hand...tell me here Cass who's your father mmmmh

Castiel: not now Madou this is serious man!

Ruslan: greet me first then we will discuss whatever happened

\*\*\*Castiel sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: fine.....how are you Madou

Ruslan: im scared of my pregnant wife to be and how are you Cass?

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: serves you right

Ruslan: fuck you....anyway what's wrong

Castiel: I met some girl....well she's Kazi's cousin and I can't read her mind like literally cant man

Ruslan: what do mean by "you can't read her mind"?

Castiel: just like you can't read minds Madou...it's like she's immune to my abilities

Ruslan: ok has something like this happened to you before

Castiel: no never...even with Juana when I still thought she's an innocent human I had to do a spell on her that prevented me from reading her mind

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok let me do some research on this and I'll get back to you

Castiel: ok be fast about it....this shit is fucking with my head man....something is.....why can't I read her man

Ruslan: calm down I'll figure it out

Castiel: ok later

\*\*\*they ended the call and Castiel sighed and he went to the parking lot\*\*\*

\*\* BACK TO KAZI.....anyway after sometime she composed herself and went after Phumi\*\*\*

Kazi: what did he say to you Phumelele

\*\*\*she said with a serious tone and Phumi frowned\*\*\*

Phumi: he asked if my parents are both South African

Kazi: don't lie to me Phumelele...dont!

\*\*she said with a voice laced with a bit of anger\*\*\*

Phumi: bathong and nou?

\*\*\*she said surprised by her sudden change of attitude towards her\*\*\*

Phumi: first of all that guy is creepy and arrogant Kazi and if you think I'm interested in that then you don't know me at all....your creepy boyfriend asked me about my parents and that's all jeez

\*\*\*Kazi face soften up a bit and she blinked fast\*\*\*

Kazi: I..... ummm

Phumi: nx

\*\*\*she walked away and Kazi sighed...she wondered why she acted that way....."does it mean I have fallen for the guy" she thought.....she then went after Phumi to apologize\*\*\*

-----



\*\*\*Well Kazi apologized and they hugged it out and continued with their shopping then later they drove to Kazi's place and spend the rest of the day catching up while eating junk food then later in the afternoon Kazi left and Phumi watched a movie having snacks until she passed out on the couch....she woke up to a knock on the door and her heard started beating fast.....she got up and went to the kitchen and she took a knife and a pan and she went to the door as the knock intensified\*\*\*

Phumi: who is it?

Voice: its Castiel open up

\*\*\*she froze with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Castiel: Phumi open up man neighbors may start thinking that im a burglar or something.....i don't wanna be burned alive with a tire around my neck

Phumi: Kazi is not here man so leave tuu

Castiel: im not here for her

Phumi: if you want me to talk to her for you then im sorry to disappoint you....she's old enough to make her own decisions so hamba tuu ( go please)

\*\*\*Castiel sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: im not here for her are you deaf....i fucken said im here for you now open up so we can talk

Phumi: don't you dare talk to me like that...im not Kazi uyangizwa (you hear me)... nx you know what entlek leave now before I call the cops

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled he could tell now that she's not a pushover\*\*\*

Castiel: fine I apologize for talking to you like that now can you open up.....please

\*\*\*she slowly opened the door but she didn't open the security door and Castiel chuckled when he saw the knife and pan on her hands \*\*\*

Phumi: what?

Castiel: I see you're ready for thieves huh

Phumi: mmmh and I know how to use them now what are you doing here

\*\*\*his face got serious...he still couldn't read her mind and it was frustrating him more and more\*\*\*

Castiel: is one of your close family members preferably your mother father or grandparents witches or wizards?

Phumi: askies?

\*\*\*she said giving him a deadly look\*\*\*

Castiel: is there a witch or wizard in your family?

Phumi: VOETSEK MSUNU!

\*\*\*then she slammed the door on his face and she locked and went back to the lounge....leaving Castiel shocked then he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: ok maybe I should've found a better way to ask her that

\*\*\*he said to himself and knocked again\*\*\*

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

INSERT.....19

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*SOMETHING SHORT...ENJOY!\*\*\*\*

Castiel: Phumi come on I just want to know

\*\*\*She ignored him until he decided to leave cause he knew he couldn't enter the house without her permission....cause Vampires can't enter a private household without the current occupant/ occupants verbally telling them to enter....after Phumi realised that he left she took her phone and dialed Kazi's numbers\*\*\*

Kazi: babe

Phumi: hey look here Kazi please warn your weird and arrogant boyfriend to stay the hell away from me cause I know people Kazi in fact you know that I know people ko kasi ( back in the hood) and he can disappear just like that without a trace so warn him assomblief!

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Kazi: wait.... you mean Castiel?

\*\*\*she said whispering his name\*\*\*

Phumi: yes....lomgodoyi wenja ( that useless dog) came here and I thought he was looking for you then boom he said he's looking for me instead and you won't believe what he wanted to know

\*\*\*Kazi swallowed hard and jealousy creeped in\*\*\*

Kazi: he...he said that?

Phumi: yes then he asked me a stupid and insulting question....in fact msoonoo o le insulted me and my family Kazi

Kazi: ummm

\*\*\*\*she was confused now\*\*\*

Phumi: he asked me if raloya ko gae imagine! (he asked me if we use witchcraft at home)

Kazi: what?

Phumi: imagine.... sebeta sa ramarete ole ( the nerve of that dick)....im sorry he's your boyfriend mara marete a gae nx ( but his testicles )....who the hell does he think he is

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice \*\*\*

Kazi: wow...ummm let me call him and hear ukuthi yini inkinga yakhe ( what's his problem)

Phumi: do so and warn him about me Kazi....im a dangerous chubby girl and I know dangerous people back at home

Kazi: I will trust me I'll make sure he knows

\*\*\*she faked a laugh\*\*\*

Phumi: good

Kazi: ok let me call him

Phumi: shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and she looked around and Menzi wasn't in sight then she dialed Castiel's numbers\*\*\*

Castiel: what is it?

\*\*\*she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Kazi: hey it's Kazi

Castiel: I know now what do you want

\*\*\*she swallowed hurt by his sudden rude and cold attitude towards her\*\*\*

Kazi: ummm Phumi called me and she said you came by my house

Castiel: I did so?

Kazi: she's angry about what you asked her

Castiel: why are you calling me Kazi

Kazi: why were you there in the first place Castiel I mean you don't even know Phumi

Castiel: udliwa yini Ntandokazi if im interested in knowing Phumi

\*\*\*she gasped\*\*\*

Kazi: wait you're interested in her?

\*\*\*she asked with a low tone\*\*\*

Castiel: listen here girly.....you made your choice so whomever I show interest in whether is purely innocent or romantic akulona udoko olugayelwe wena lelo ( its none of your business)..... even if it's your mother okzalayo.... now lose my numbers and enjoy your boring hitman in peace I don't have time for confused little girls im way too old for that shit

\*\*\*then he dropped the call leaving Kazi shocked and hurt by what he said then Menzi walked in\*\*\*

Menzi: sthandwa sam are you sure uPhumi is alright in your house all alone?

Kazi: Phumi this Phumi that....aarg man!

\*\*\*she got up and walked away looking angry leaving Menzi confused and shocked by her\*\*\*

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*the following day Mbali and Ray were having breakfast when Ruslan just walked in house looking like he didn't sleep at all last night\*\*\*

Ruu: familia ( family)

\*\*\*he said and kissed Mbali's cheek and he sat down joining them on the dining table\*\*\*

Mbali: hey Ruu.....damn you look like hell

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: what happened to you man

Ruslan: hardly slept Mpilo had nightmares almost the whole night and he was afraid to go back to sleep.... I couldn't even do a spell on him so he'll be able sleep cause he might still have the nightmare but he'll find it hard to wake up

Ray: damn....will he be ok

Ruu: yeah don't worry he'll be fine

Mbali: you know I'll never get used to you having "powers" Ruu

\*\*\*he chuckled as he dished up for himself\*\*\*

Ruu: but you can get used to Saint mmmmh?

Mbali: leave my baby alone please

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed and Ray just shook his head\*\*\*

Ray: why is it that you're growing fond of that pain in the ass demon my flower

Mbali: he protects me baby so he has a special place in my heart

\*\*\*she said and Ruu looked at Ray surprised\*\*\*

Mbali: what?

Ruu: nothing his flower im just shocked by your statement

Mbali: he's part of my son Ruu just like La Parca is part of my husband and if I want to live a peaceful and stress free life I need to accept both of them into our lives....i cant afford to be scared of my son or Ray because they have demons in them... and you know they say black don't crack right well my skin is light so that means I crack easily and I can't have that

\*\*\*both Ray and Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Ray: I can't believe you just said that baby

\*\*\*he said still laughing along with Ruu\*\*\*

Mbali: but its true haw

\*\*\*they continued to laugh.... anyway they had their breakfast conversing and laughing.....well after their breakfast Ray and Ruu went to his study while Mbali cleared the table\*\*\*

## IN THE STUDY ROOM

Ray: so what caused the nightmares man

Ruslan: those fucken Mashaba's are responsible man

Ray: what?

\*\*\*he said looking at Ruu with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Ruu: yeah but don't worry Thandi and the kids are all protected now and as for those fuckers I'll deal with them....they all gonna run around the streets as mad people all of them....starting with their zombies cats dogs and even their rats...all of them!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice then he breathed out trying to calm himself\*\*\*

Ray: so those pieces of shit don't learn huh

\*\*\*he said pissed off\*\*\*

Ruu: don't worry they'll learn the hard way

Ray: damn it....how can they do that to a child man....Mpilo is their own blood for fuck's sake!

Ruu: they don't give a damn about those boys man all they care about is money and power while that shithead called Jerry or Gerald or Jackson wants my Thandi..... I swear that bastard will curse the day he developed feelings for her by time im done with him!

\*\*\* he got up and went to pour some whiskey for both of them and he went back to sit on the couch and gave Ray his drink and he sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: then there's Cass

Ray: what did he do now?

\*\*\*Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: well apparently he met a lady who is Kazi's cousin and he said he can't read her mind like he does with everyone else

Ray: damn.... for real?

\*\*\*he took a sip of his drink and he nodded\*\*\*

Ray: has something like that ever happened to him before

Ruu: he said no

Ray: damn so what does it mean man?

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: well it means two things actually.....she's either protected by a spell or something that prevents Cass from reading her mind cause she's our enemy or she's his mate....his chosen one

Ray: wooh.....

Ruu: mmm

\*\*\*he took another sip\*\*\*

Ray: damn....if she's not the mate then she could be with the Brethren

\*\*\*Ruu nodded\*\*\*

Ray: but what about what Juana said

Ruu: that bitch lied about a lot of things man I wouldn't be surprised if she made a mistake.... I mean Kazi and that girl are related so maybe she confused the two or she's not as good as she thinks she is and her powers are weak

\*\*\*Ray laughed\*\*\*



Ray: you know even today I don't understand why those evil blood sucking fuckers call themselves THE BRETHREN... I mean brethren are fellow Christians or members of a male religious group or order right

\*\*\*Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Ruu: well brethren is a fancy plural form of "brother" so yeah you right cause during ancient times men and women used to call each other brethren in their religious groups

Ray: then they should call themselves "brethren of lucifer" instead

\*\*\*Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Ruu: well their original name is "The Brethren of diablo" ( brothers/sisters of the devil)

Ray: Lucifer the devil..... same shit

\*\*\*Ruu laughed again\*\*\*

Ruu: yeah.... "pieces of shit" is what they should call themselves

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Ruu: so you really called Celine over huh

\*\*\*Ray sighed and he gulped down the rest of his drink at one go and Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: yeah...i swear Mbali is gonna send me to my early grave man

\*\*\*Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Ruu: you should've refused

Ray: well Mrs Owoh-Masden threatened to set up the meeting herself if I don't

\*\*\*Ruu laughed again\*\*\*

Ruu: I couldn't believe it when you told me over the phone man

Ray: this girl is gonna give me heart problems im telling you man

\*\*\*Ruu laughed then Ray's phone rang and it was Celine he sighed and answered\*\*\*

Ray: Celine

Celine: im outside

Ray: ok I'll let you in

\*\*\*he dropped the call and Ray brushed his face and he got up\*\*\*

Ray: let's go she's here

\*\*\*Ruu got up and he followed him chuckling\*\*\*

IN THE LOUNGE

Ray: she's here

\*\*\*he said to Mbali and she got up with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Ruu: are you sure you want to do this his flower

Mbali: yeah....Let her in babe

Ray: im sure she's not even wearing anything since I told her I'll be all alone so....

\*\*\*she clenched her jaws\*\*\*

Mbali: don't worry about that....you won't fuck her so it's no biggy

\*\*\*Ruu looked at Ray with his eyebrows raised and an amused look plastered on his face and Ray huffed and he opened the gate for Celine.... then Mbali went to the dining area and she came back with a chair and she put it on the empty space that was in the lounge and she waited\*\*\*

Ray: and the chair

Mbali: its for our guest baby

\*\*\*Ruu held back his smile....he was impressed by Mbali while Ray was worried about her.... then they heard the doorbell ring and he sighed and went to open.....Mbali and Ruu heard her voice and soon she walked in wearing a long brown coat that showed her cleavage with knee high boots she was followed by her two bodyguards and Mbali chuckled getting angry....Celine frowned when her eyes landed on Mbali and Ruu\*\*\*

Celine: what the hell is this Raymond...i thought you said you'll be alone?

Mbali: sit!

\*\*\*she looked at Mbali up and down and she chuckled clearly mocking Mbali\*\*\*

Celine: you talking to me little girl

Ray: Celine!

\*\*\*he warned her then her two bodyguards took a step forward with their hands on their waists were their guns are\*\*\*

Mbali: SAINT COME OUT NOW!

\*\*\*Ruu and Ray's eyes popped out and immediately wind like sounds filled the room and the windows immediately got covered with dark smoke and it became dark inside but luckily the lamps were on inside the lounge and dining area\*\*\*

Celine: WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON HERE RAYMOND!

\*\*\*she said looking around and her bodyguards got closer to her trying to protect her\*\*\*

Ray: Mbali!

Ruu: damn!

\*\*\*then another black smoke formed a figure next to Mbali....even though she was a little scared of Saint ( the demon) but she knew he or it won't hurt her in any way...as for Celine and the bodyguard they drew out their guns pointing them at the smoke formed figure with their shaking hands and eyes popped out\*\*\*

Ruu: I wouldn't do that if I were you

\*\*\*he warned them and immediately their guns melted and they quickly dropped them on the floor cursing\*\*\*

Guard1: what the fuck!

\*\*\*he said looking scared while the other one was frozen on the spot\*\*\*

Celine: Ray what the hell is this....wha...what's going on here?

\*\*\*she said with her eyes popped out and her heart pounding hard against her chest\*\*\*

Mbali: my son take these two men trying to protect this evil witch that hurt mommy away and deal with them but don't kill them just make sure they have nightmares that will haunt them for the rest of their miserable lives

Voice: yes mommy

\*\*\*then the guards got lifted up by the black smoke all of a sudden and they screamed as the smoke moved away with them from the lounge going to the basement.... Well in the basement Saint really dealt with them accordingly he/it left them curled up into a ball in the corner with their knees up on their chest and their hands wrapping around them while they rocked themselves back and forth with tears running down their cheeks\*\*\*

IN THE LOUNGE

Ray: my flower

Mbali: Ray please not now.....now what I want from this bitch is to sit the fuck down on that chair before Saint makes her

Celine: Raymond!

\*\*\*she said trying to sound brave as she looked at him but a crack in her voice gave her away and Mbali smirked\*\*\*

Ruu: wow im impressed Mrs Owoh-Masden

\*\*\*he said as he went to sit down on the couch....as for Ray he stood there shocked impressed but most of all worried\*\*\*

Mbali: SAINT!

\*\*\*the smoke figure came back from the basement\*\*\*

Saint: yes mommy

\*\*\*Celine quickly sat down\*\*\*

Mbali: good bitch

\*\*\*Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Celine: what do you want?

\*\*\*she said looking at Mbali with an angry look on her face\*\*\*

Saint: don't look at mommy like that!

\*\*\* Saint said with his creepy and scary voice but Celine because of her stubbornness she kept looking at Mbali with a deadly look then the smoke figure quickly moved coming towards her and she quickly closed her eyes shaking\*\*\*

Saint: I won't tell you again!

\*\*\*Saint warned her and Mbali's face got filled with a lot of a bad-bitch attitude and she smiled\*\*\*

Mbali: thank you baby

\*\*\*then the smoke moved back a bit and Celine opened her eyes but she looked down instead scared to look up\*\*\*

Mbali: now here's the thing....before we get to you trying to ruin my marriage let's start with Ray's "supposed" child

\*\*\*Ray and Ruu's eyes popped out and they looked at each other talking with their eyes then they looked back at Mbali and Celine\*\*\*

Mbali: is there really a baby or you made that up....and another thing Ruu over there is a real wizard so if you lie bitch he'll know and Saint my boy over here will deal with you.....now is there a baby or not

Celine: ye...yes there is

\*\*\*Mbali swallowed\*\*\*

Mbali: and the baby mama?

Celine: she...she was Rosalina my cousin

\*\*\*Ray sighed and he looked down when Mbali looked at him and Mbali swallowed again trying by all means not to shed a tear....she cleared her throat and composed herself\*\*\*

Mbali: you said she was your cousin

Celine: she.... she died of drug overdose

\*\*\*\*Ruu frowned\*\*\*

Ruu: mmmm Celine....

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Mbali: what is it Ruu?

Ruu: she's lying

Celine: no...no im not

Mbali: Saint!

Saint: yes mommy

\*\*\*he said with his scary voice\*\*\*

Celine: ok ok I killed her....i paid someone to inject her with an overdose of drugs to make it look like suicide cause I was angry that she managed to sleep with Raymond and even got pregnant while I failed

\*\*\*Ray chuckled getting angry cause Rosalina was a sweet girl even if she was still alive he knew she wouldn't come with baby mama drama cause she was scared of him\*\*\*

Mbali: where's the baby

\*\*\*Celine kept quiet\*\*\*

Mbali: im not gonna ask you again bitch

Celine: i...i sold her to some married couple back in Venezuela who can't conceive

Ray: you fucken Bitch!

\*\*\* he rushed to her and a punch landed on her face breaking her nose then he grabbed her by her neck looking deadly that even Mbali got scared by looking at him\*\*\*

Ruu: Ray!

Ray: THEIR LOCATION NOW!

\*\*\*he said squeezing tight and she struggled to breathe busy making shocking sounds with her hands trying to pull Ray hand off her neck\*\*\*

Ray: ANSWER ME DAMN IT!

Mbali: Ray stop!

\*\*\*he didn't at first but when she touched his arm he came back to his senses and he let her go and turned to look at a scared Mbali then he looked back at Celine who was coughing uncontrollably with thick blood coming out of her nose.....Ray still had that scary look on his face\*\*\*

Ray: give me my daughter's location or I'll let Saint deal with you!

\*\*\*Celine continued to cough holding her painful neck\*\*\*

-----

AT KAZI'S HOUSE

\*\*\* Phumi has been trying to call Kazi who wasn't answering her calls the whole morning and she was getting a bad vibe that maybe she was avoiding her.....she wished she didn't call her last night about Castiel showing up here and all that he said cause she

could see that Kazi liked the guy even though she was now dating Menzi.....she sighed and decided to call Menzi\*\*\*

Menzi: yeah

Phumi: ummm hey Menzi its Phumi Kazi's cousin

Menzi: ooh hey is everything ok

Phumi: yeah...actually no I've been trying to call Kazi all morning and she's not answering my calls

\*\*\*Menzi sighed cause Kazi slept without saying anything to him and she also woke up in a bad mood even the morning glory he gave her didn't change her mood and he wondered what happened between them....he wanted to ask her but he thought against it thinking that they will squash whatever fight they had soon \*\*\*

Menzi: ummm I last saw her before I left for work.... she's probably busy or something

Phumi: ooh yeah maybe anyway please tell her to call me back when you talk her

Menzi: ok I will shap

Phumi: shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and then there was a knock on the door and she quickly got up and went to open the door thinking its Kazi and her face fell when she saw that it was Castiel instead.....she tried to close the door but he blocked it with his hand\*\*\*

Castiel: I come in peace....

\*\*\*he said showing her the bouquet of flowers and a box of expensive swizz chocolates\*\*\*

Castiel: im sorry about last night..... what I said didn't come out exactly the way I wanted it to come out

Phumi: ufuna ngiyenzeni ngamaflower heh ( what do you want me to do with flowers) do I look like a white woman to you?

\*\*\*Castiel looked at her shocked\*\*\*



Phumi: and what's with those chocolates..... weh Castiel or Castor oil or Custard or Caster Semenya.... whatever your name is....

\*\*\*she said waving her hand around\*\*\*

Phumi: don't you know amaFerrero Roche mmmmh ngiyenzi mina ngaleyo brooklax (don't you know Ferrero Roche's mmmmh what should I do with those Brooklax "laxatives" )

\*\*\*Castiel wanted to say something but for the first time in his 105 years he was out of words say\*\*\*

Phumi: ngicela uhambe tuu Castor oil anginaso isikhathi sakho mina (please leave Castor oil I don't have time for you) Kazi is angry at me cause you showed up here so tsamaya tuu ( leave) before she finds you here

\*\*\*then she slammed the door on his face and locked it going to the lounge while clicking her tongue angrily\*\*\*

Phumi: yho go decid(a) go shapa ke moyanyana mo KZN then phrrtlh ke gafela ke motho ebile motho wa teng obitsa ba ko gae baloi ....ai dilo tsa KZN ( yho I decide to come to KZN for some fresh air and out of the blue this guy is all over my face he's even saying everyone at home uses witchcraft.... ai KZN things)

\*\*\*\* she shook her head and tried Kazi again but this time it send her straight to voicemail.....she sighed and sat down thinking that maybe she should just go back home\*\*\*

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

INSERT.....16

.

.

.

## NIGERIA

\*\*\*They arrived at some building and Jabu and Heath sat still not getting out of the car\*\*\*

Mj: what...what are we doing here bros?

Heath: you'll see

\*\*\*Mj swallowed hard\*\*\*

Mj: I hope you two are not here to sell me to ritualists ooo

\*\*\*Jabu chuckled\*\*\*

Heath: and if we are?

\*\*\*Mj quickly tried to open the car door but it was locked\*\*\*

Mj: open this door....open it I want to get out!

Jabu: ey blei stel man or keng o thomile go gafa? ( sit still or what have you started going crazy)

Mj: brother Ezeh please don't do this....God is watching ooo he's watching and he no like wetin you dey do ....abeg open the door shame the devil and open this door abeg

\*\*\*he said looking scared\*\*\*

Heath: mxm I swear Mj if I hear "phem" from your mouth again I'll deal with you

\*\*\*he warned him and Mj kept quiet keeping himself from speaking but eish it was hard....then two scary looking guys came to the car and Heath unlocked the door and they opened Mj's door and grabbed his arm pulling him out of the car and he screamed\*\*\*

Mj: ey wetin you dey do ( what are you doing) ... brother Heath help me.. don't let them take me im begging you

\*\*\*then one of the guys injected him on his neck and he passed out\*\*\*

Guy: we should put him in bros?

Heath: yeah but I'll put the frogs in myself

\*\*\*they nodded and carried him away\*\*\*

Jabu: kao chaela Mshikaro die kind o inyela ge a tsoga ( im telling you Mshikaro that boy will shit himself when he wakes up)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Heath: we need pictures for big Ray

\*\*\*they laughed again\*\*\*

-----

#### INSIDE RUSLAN'S CAR

\*\*\*Thandi was looking outside the window with tears running down her cheeks while Ruslan was just sitting there staring into space....They just got out of the doctor's office with conformation that Thandi is in fact pregnant and the bleeding wasn't periods but spotting that usually happens to most women on their first trimester the baby was ok and the heartbeat too was strong..... Well Ruslan didn't understand why Thandi was mad and why she wasn't happy that she was pregnant he was in fact disappointed by her reaction\*\*\*

Ruslan: so you're not gonna say anything about the fact that you're pregnant

\*\*\*She kept quiet wiping her tears off and she continued to look outside the window.....they were still parked outside the Doctor's surgery\*\*\*

Ruslan: Thandi?

Thandi: did you get me pregnant on purpose?

\*\*\*Ruslan kept quiet looking at her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: why would you ask me that?

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone\*\*\*

Thandi: im asking so I expect an answer from you

\*\*\*she said with a serious tone too and Ruslan chuckled a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: and if I did?

\*\*\*she turned and looked at him with a serious look on her face\*\*\*

Thandi: did you or did you not

Ruslan: I said what if I did

\*\*\*she breathed in and out loudly\*\*\*

Thandi: is that why you refused to use a condom even after I told you im not on any contraceptives

Ruslan: no

\*\*\*he said still looking at her\*\*\*

Thandi: then how the hell did you know I was pregnant and come to think of it you began touching my stomach few days after we had sex

Ruslan: we made love!

\*\*\*he said correcting her and she gave im a deadly look but he wasn't moved\*\*\*

Thandi: how did you know Ruslan?

Ruslan: does it matter though amour

Thandi: YES IT DOES!

\*\*\*she said shouting and he raised an eyebrow at her\*\*\*

Ruslan: tone it down before you piss me off!

\*\*\*he said warning her....he was still as chilled as ever but his voice was filled with so much authority....he only had a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Thandi: mxm

\*\*\*she looked outside the window and Ruslan just continued to look at her\*\*\*

Ruslan: why are you acting like this amour?

Thandi: wena how did you know I was pregnant

Ruslan: I just knew ok

Thandi: let me guess it has something to do with your eyes changing colour right

\*\*\*Ruslan kept quiet a bit then he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: let's just go home and we will talk there

\*\*\*she didn't say anything and he started the car and drove away\*\*\*

-----

## AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Mbali and Kalu were taking a nap upstairs and Ray was tired from searching the entire house for his precious ball he couldn't find it and that made him angrier and more frustrated....he then went to the kitchen and he took out bottled water and drank from the bottle then he searched for what he could eat in the fridge and he found a plate with untouched food in it then he saw pots on the stove and to him it meant Mbali cooked and that plate was probably his.....Anyway he took the plate and heated the food in the microwave and he sat down and started eating like a hungry animal ....record time he was finished and he downed the food with some beer he washed the plate and as he

was about to walk out of the kitchen his stomach grumbled and he stopped walking and he held his stomach\*\*\*

Ray: mmmmh

\*\*\*he groaned as he started feeling some cramps...he moved again and the feeling got worse and he groaned again then he thought maybe is gas so he tried to release some but yeses instead he released more than gas...he quickly tightened his butt cheeks together and he ran to the toilet that is downstairs and the moments he sat down gwa nyewa blaen (shit happened)\*\*\*

\*\*\* It's been an hour and he was still busy in the toilet....he was covered in sweat and his eyes were red and he was now shirtless and his ass hole was on fire..... Well another hour passed and he was now sitting on the cold tiled floor waiting for his stomach to start acting up again he was weak and sweating and he felt like shit....anyway it looked like he was done shitting so he got up balancing himself with the wall and he walked out slowly....he went upstairs and when he got inside the bedroom he found Mbali sitting up on the bed busy on her phone....he ignored her and just went straight to the bathroom and soon Mbali heard the shower running\*\*\*

Mbali: I hope that Epsom salt (magnesium sulfate compound) ikhiphe bonke ubufebe out of his system nx ( I hope that Epsom salt took out all his whore ways out of his system nx)

\*\*\*she said to herself and she continued to concentrate on her phone.... after sometime the shower stopped running and soon she heard Ray groaning loud inside the bathroom and she smiled\*\*\*

Mbali: mmmmh bukiphe bonke sthandwa sam....bonke nje ( take it all out my love... all of it)

\*\*\* soon the toilet flushed and the shower ran again\*\*\*

Mbali: don't worry sthandwa sam soon you'll be all clean and new and free of ivirus yobufefe and we will work on our marriage

\*\*\*after some time Ray walked out naked and shame he looked flushed he also looked weak and pale....he went to his underwear drawer and he took out some clean ones and wore them\*\*\*

Mbali: ummm are you ok

Ray: im fine!

\*\*\*he snapped at her\*\*\*

Mbali: jeez sorry for giving a damn then

\*\*\*she said and got out of bed and she walked to the door\*\*\*

Ray: im sorry.... I didn't mean to snap

\*\*\*she turned and looked at him\*\*\*

Ray: I think I ate something bad or it's a stomach bug.... I just don't know

\*\*\*He said sitting down on the edge of the bed looking down\*\*\*

Mbali: ooh what did you eat?

\*\*\*she said sounding worried and he groaned holding his stomach but the pain subsided quickly\*\*\*

Ray: I found a plate with cooked food in the....

\*\*\*he stopped talking and his eyes popped out and he swallowed hard\*\*\*

Mbali: what?

Ray: no...nothing

\*\*\* " no she wouldn't....would she?....well she's nighthawks daughter so.....damn would she?" is what he thought\*\*\*

Mbali: it must have been the mixed vege's I cooked then maybe I didn't wash them properly or something....i mean I didn't eat them cause you know I hate greens maybe that's why im ok

\*\*\*Ray swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ray: ummm yeah maybe

Mbali: ok I'll be back let me bring you pills that will stop the diarrhea

Ray: yeah

\*\*\*she walked out going downstairs to the medicine cabinet and he quickly reached for his phone and he dialed Ruslan's numbers\*\*\*

Ruslan: ey man can I call you back i....

\*\*\*Ray interrupted him\*\*\*

Ray: she's trying to kill me man

\*\*\*he was whispering\*\*\*

Ruslan: wait what?

Ray: I think she put something in my food and I can't stop shitting man....my ass is on fire...you need to help me man

Ruslan: who and what are you talking about

Ray: Mbali....i think she wants me dead man....i can't stop shitting and it all started after I ate the food she cooked

Ruslan: ummm where are you?

Ray: im home man you need to come and save me man I can't stop shitting man

\*\*\*Ruslan held his laugh and Ray rushed to the toilet and he continued "shitting" .....Ruslan heard Ray groaning and weird sounds coming from the end of the line and he cleared his throat trying by all means not to laugh\*\*\*

Ruslan: are you ok man

Ray: im dying man....you need to come and save me man im fucken dying



Ruslan: you're not dying so stop acting up....you'll be fine.... don't you think I would see your death coming from miles away

Ray: I don't care im dying and my murderer is in this fucken house with me and worst part is I sleep next to her every fucken night!

Mbali: babe you ok in there?

\*\*\*Ray jumped a bit\*\*\*

Ray: yea...yeahh I'll be out in a minute

Mbali: ok

Ray: she's even calling me babe....i swear she's going to kill me man

\*\*\* he whispered and Ruslan laughed....he tried to hold himself but he just couldn't and Thandi gave him an annoyed look cause she was still sulking from finding out she's pregnant....Ruslan drove inside the yard and he parked the car and Thandi opened the door and got out going inside and Ruslan stopped laughing when he saw Thandi walking inside looking pissed and he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: look man Mbali will never want you dead maybe she's just teaching you a lesson remember she's a woman scorned man and those are dangerous.... they are even worse than lucifer himself

\*\*\*he groaned again as he relived himself again\*\*\*

Ray: you're not helping man....i swear if I die it's all on you....all on you!

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and Ruslan busted out with laughter....anyway Ray finished doing his business and he flushed and washed his hands and he got out....he found her sitting on the edge of the bed with a box of pills and bottled water\*\*\*

Mbali: shame....come and sit my love

\*\*\*he swallowed hard looking at her and he sat down\*\*\*

Mbali: take two they'll quickly stop the diarrhea

\*\*\*he took the box and read the instructions then he opened the bottled water and he sighed with relief that it was sealed and he drank the pills.....she then helped him get

under the covers and she kissed his forehead and took Kalu and she went downstairs....  
Ray then took his phone and send Castiel a message and it read;

“I think Mbali is trying to kill me man...I know I cheated and hurt her but to kill me.....look  
if anything happens to me tell my brothers I love them and I love you and that asshole  
Ruslan too”

\*\*\*then he tried to sleep while lying on his stomach\*\*\*

-----

AT THANDI'S NEW HOUSE

\*\*\*Castiel rushed in the lounge putting on his jacket and he found Ruslan and Thandi\*\*\*

Castiel: im rushing to Ray's house...his wife is....ummm he's not well man

Ruslan: relax he'll be fine....Mbali is just showing him flames for fucking up

Castiel: wait he called you?

Ruslan: yeah he fucked up so he should take it like a man

Castiel: ooh but damn he sounded...

Ruslan: he'll be fine man but you can go check on him for moral support.... I'll go see  
him later

Castiel: ooh ok

\*\*\*then he mind-communicated with him\*\*\*

Castiel: " are you two good"

Ruslan: “ yeah”

Castiel: “ she’s pretty pissed off so be careful”

Ruslan: “ wait did you read her mind”

\*\*\*Thandi just looked at them as they looked at each other speaking with their eyes and she frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: “yeah but when ya’ll where leaving earlier and dude she was mad-angry”

\*\*\* he mind-communicated laughing then he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Castiel: ok guys later

\*\*\*he walked to the door\*\*\*

Ruslan: don’t eat anything she gives you

\*\*\*Ruslan said and he chuckled and Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: im on a.... “bloody” diet anyway

Ruslan: CASS!

\*\*\*he laughed walking out then Ruslan cleared his throat turning his focus back to Thandi\*\*\*

Thandi: mmm a re utlwe ( talk)

Ruslan: huh?

Thandi: start talking

Ruslan: you know I can also choose to speak in my mother tongue

\*\*\*she kept quiet and he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: fine... look im sorry for not telling you that you’re pregnant...I just wanted you to find out on your own amour that’s why I didn’t tell you

Thandi: how you knew that im pregnant is what I want to know cause now that I remember you started touching my stomach the same week we started being intimate

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: are you sure you want to know

Thandi: I wouldn't be asking if I wasn't

Ruslan: don't be cheeky with me Thandi

\*\*\*she kept quiet looking at him with a raise eyebrow and Ruslan chuckled and he sat back\*\*\*

Ruslan: once I tell you how I knew I won't be able to.... "untell you" just so you know

Thandi: untell really?

\*\*\*she said with a bored look on her face and he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: damn you're beautiful amour and I can't wait to see our little girl I pray she comes looking like you in fact Im sure she'll look like you.... I can't wait to hold her in my arms and to spend the rest of my fucked up life protecting her and our boys

Thandi: im waiting for my answer Ruslan

\*\*\*she said ignoring what he just said and he laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok then since you can't let this go.....here it goes I have powers....special powers

\*\*\*she continued giving him the bored look\*\*\*

Ruslan: fine since you're like Thomas from the bible then look at that couch

\*\*\*he pointed at the couch and Thandi looked at it and Ruslan's eyes changed colour and he moved his index and middle finger from left to right and the couch moved\*\*\*

Thandi: wait...did that just happen

\*\*\* she said frowning and he moved it back to where it was and Thandi jumped back\*\*\*

Thandi: what the!

\*\*\*she said with her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Ruslan: clam down please

\*\*\*he said looking at her he could see she was freaked out\*\*\*

Thandi: how did you...how is that possible...I mean did that couch move....i mean what just happened defies the laws of physics...what the hell man!

Ruslan: like I said I have special powers....im a wizard Thandi

\*\*\*she gave him a shocked look...it was like she was frozen on the spot\*\*\*

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: that's how I knew you were pregnant that early

\*\*\*she kept quiet trying to process everything....it became silent for some time\*\*\*

Ruslan: say something amour

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: say something please

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Thandi: ho...how?

Ruslan: mother was a witch....one of the best ever lived....she was American while my father was a normal African man from Guinea Bissau

\*\*\*she swallowed again\*\*\*

Ruslan: I also have a PhD in Parapsychology it's a study of supernatural phenomenon.... I wanted to learn and gain more knowledge about the powers I inherited from my mother and I must say I aced it ....arg it's a long ass story and I'll tell you all about it some day

\*\*\*she just looked at him with her jaws dropped...he then got up and went to sit next to her and he kissed her cheek\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you amour and I hope you won't leave me because of this

\*\*\*he then put his hand on her belly\*\*\*

Ruslan: even if you decide to we both know I won't let you go.....

\*\*\*she swallowed hard blinking too much and they kept quiet for some time until she spoke\*\*\*

Thandi: a witch huh?

Ruslan: a wizard my love

Thandi: its 6 and 9 same shit

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: well im a wizard who has a PhD amour so there's a difference

\*\*\*she swallowed and looked at him as he had a cute smile on his face \*\*\*

Thandi: well that PhD doesn't make the "wizard" part disappear Ruu

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: im a proud one amour and I wouldn't change it for anything.... look I don't fly on brooms or loafs of bread or any of those shits overnight witches do out there.... I don't have what you call tikoloshi's under my bed and any other shit those useless witches do out there

\*\*\*he then thought about his zombies and he cleared his throat...he couldn't tell her about that cause he might end up traumatizing her for life\*\*\*

Ruslan: I just have immense powers and I use them for good

\*\*\*she sighed with her heart pounding hard\*\*\*

Ruslan: please calm down amour your BP is raising

Thandi: ooh so you can also tell when my BP is raising mmmh?

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: I can hear your heart beating fast

Thandi: you can hear it

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah but only when im this close

\*\*\* a normal person would have to put his ear on her chest to hear her heart beating fast but Ruslan was sitting next to her and not even close close but he could hear it\*\*\*

Thandi: ooh God!

\*\*\*he pulled her closer and kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Thandi: so your "magic" is actually you using your powers

Ruslan: yeah

Thandi: I can believe this

Ruslan: don't think too much about this amour...im still the same Ruslan who loves you unconditionally

Thandi: does Ray Heath and Jabu know

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah Ray has known for years and Heath and that crazy brother of yours Jabu knew not long ago and if I was an evil man they wouldn't have let me be even an inch closer to you or the boys

\*\*\*"yes he's right they wouldn't" she thought.... then silence filled the room\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you amour so much

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ruslan: and this doesn't change anything about this only means you know more about me more than any other woman I've been with knew about me or knew me

Thandi: so I should be happy that my fiancé is a wizard

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: no you should be happy that now you can be able to deal with people that messes with you using my spells

\*\*\*he thought she would laugh but she didn't instead she got off his hold and she stood up and looked at Ruslan with her hands on her waist\*\*\*

Thandi: ok...ok enough about you being a witch/wizard and me being pregnant cause it is what it is and I can't change any of it... but what I can change or better yet what I want to know is what possessed you to shout at me like that earlier on

\*\*\*she said giving him a "you better answer me" look\*\*\*

Ruslan: what?

\*\*\*he said confused\*\*\*

Thandi: ke ra sebetse Ruslan sa go omya nna Thandi o se tseya kae (im saying the gut to shout at me Thandi where did you get it)

Ruslan: about look i...

\*\*\*she interrupted him\*\*\*

Thandi: ema pele abuti o sa ntsena moganong assomblief (wait a minute bro don't interrupt me please)...all I want to know from you is the liver ke ra se..be..te Ruslan to shout at me like that where did you get it heh....first of all I didn't know I was pregnant so I want to know where you got the liver the audacity kera sona se..be..te to talk to me like that

\*\*\* She said with an angry look on her face and Ruslan just looked at her shocked to the core\*\*\*

-----



## AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\* Castiel arrived and he asked to see Ray and Mbali went to wake him up and the first thing he said when he saw Ray was “ damn you look like shit” ....anyhow they now just walked inside his study room and as soon as the door closed Castiel busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

Ray: mxm so Ruu told you

Castiel: a little but reading your wife's mind just painted a clear picture of what happened to you

\*\*\*he said laughing\*\*\*

Ray: mxm

Castiel: damn your wife is gangster man

\*\*\*Ray sighed and went to sit down then his eyes landed on his signed basketball nicely placed on his custom made bookshelf and he frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: what?

\*\*\*he just went to it and there was a note attached to it ...he took the note and it read;

“ im ready to fix our marriage now unless you want round 2 of the whole shit then im game my love”

\*\*\*he sighed shaking his head and he ended up chuckling then Castiel took the note from him and read it then he laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: so are you ready to fix things or you want round 2?

\*\*\*he said laughing\*\*\*

Ray: its not funny man

Castiel: it is cause you met your fucken match man.... its true when they say dynamites comes in small packages....damn she's gangster and I like her in fact im glad you married her

\*\*\*Ray put the letter down and he went to sit down and he clicked his tongue\*\*\*

Ray: you don't know what I've been through so stop praising her barbaric act Castiel

\*\*\*then there was a knock on the door and Mbali walked in with a tray....she walked to them and she put the tray down and it had two plates of food\*\*\*

Mbali: I ordered your favourite food from your favourite restaurant

\*\*\*she said with a smile\*\*\*

Ray: thanks but im not hungry

Mbali: don't be silly baby you need to eat so you can gain some strength haw cause you look a bit pale sthandwa sam

Castiel: mmmmh he does

\*\*\*Ray gave him a deadly stare\*\*\*

Mbali: see even Cass agrees with me now eat up

Castiel: don't worry I'll make sure he eats

Mbali: thank you

\*\*\*she said smiling at him\*\*\*

Mbali: ok then call me if you need anything else ok

Castiel: we will our wife

\*\*\*she laughed and she kissed Ray's cheek and she walked out and as soon as the door closed Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Ray: im not eating that food....i love her with everything in me but im not really to die....im not eating!

-----

## NIGERIA

\*\*\*\*Mj moved a bit with his eyes still closed he felt something on his lips and he groaned...his hand automatically went to his mouth and it touched something soft then that thing moved to his left eye making noise and that's when he got alarmed...he quickly slapped it off his face and he opened his eyes sitting up straight and what he saw made his heart to skip a beat then continue beating at a fast pace....he moved back looking scared with his eyes moving around and he could see he was in a small room filled with frogs with a small window that brought in some light and the worst thing is he has a phobia of frogs\*\*\*

Mj: no...no...no

\*\*\*he said looking at the frogs jumping around the small room making noise\*\*\*

Mj: SOMEONE HELP ME...HELP MEEEE....PLEASEEE OOO

Voice: since you like going around shooting people and causing your mama and papa heart attacks then this will be your prison for the time being to calm the fuck down to earth and think about your life and the frogs will be your cell mates....

\*\*\*the voice spoke from the other side of the door\*\*\*

Mj: please ooo please man I dey learn my lesson abeg let me out

\*\*\*he begged still rooted on his spot with his eyes on the frogs\*\*\*

Voice: next time it will be a real police cell with real cell mates who would tear that ass up....so think about your life ooo! anyway be nice to your cell mates and don't mind them cause they tend to be noisy

\*\*\*the guy chuckled and walked away with Mj shouting and begging him to open the door while crying\*\*\*

Guy: you two are cruel man.....he's freaked out in there man he's even crying

Heath: bro's water pass garri ( bro things have reached a breaking point) this boy need to learn man...Mj is too spoilt and im afraid one day he'll do something that will ruin his life....he always do shit cause he knows we will bail him out of it but one day he's gonna mess with the wrong people and bro's mmmmh...

\*\*\*he said shaking his head\*\*\*

Jabu: yeah imagine if that girl was a daughter of one of those chiefs that have influence in high places heh....or the chief was some heartless motherfucker and when they walked in on them fucking he put a bullet on his head instead of beating him up

Guy: I don't hear bro's ( I hear you bro's)

Heath: he maybe a teenager but next year he's going to varsity and varsity is no child's play man....that place can become hell for you if you're not focused...yes its fine to enjoy yourself and make new friends but that's where you also make enemies man that's where you shape your life and future or ruin it completely and with Mj thinking he's above anything and everyone.... im afraid cause im sure he'll make sure every freaken person knows he's our brother

Jabu: mmmmh eish..... life in SA is fast and dangerous bro's and if you're not careful it will swallow you nja yam....the gangs there are too much and they target young boys to recruit them...then there's drugs and shit and Mj is not focused man he's too childish and irresponsible and we don't wanna wake up one morning to the police telling us to come and identify his body

\*\*\*Heath sighed looking worried\*\*\*

Jabu: damn eish Mshikaro skopo saka sa opa cause he boletse paragraph e yotlhe ka se ngamla fela yeses ( I have a headache from speaking the whole paragraph in English damn)

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Heath: yeah you did damn....

Jabu: ke sho lemadlozi a ka a maketse ( im sure even my ancestors are shocked)

\*\*\*Heath laughed out loud then after he calmed down he explained what Jabu said to the guy and he also laughed\*\*\*

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

INSERT.....17

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*\*AT THANDI'S NEW HOUSE\*\*\*\*

Ruslan: umm Amor look im sorry ok

Thandi: I didn't ask if you're sorry or not Ruslan I asked you gore where did you get the liver...sebeta sa go nshout(a) ( the gut to shout at me)

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed and he got up and he tried to touch her but she moved away from him with a pissed off look on her face\*\*\*

Ruslan: amor don't do this please

\*\*\*he said with a pained look on his face\*\*\*

Thandi: Ruslan im waiting ok....im pressed so I need to pee but im not going anywhere until you answer my question

\*\*\*Ruslan looked at her shocked\*\*\*

Ruslan: ummm ok look I shouldn't have amor I don't know what got into me I just panicked my love and im sorry

\*\*\*he didn't know what to say that will make her calm down....that's all he could come up with....she looked at him fuming then she clicked her tongue and walked away\*\*\*

Ruslan: amor!

\*\*\*he said going after her....she ignored him and she went inside the bathroom and slammed the door shut and locked it then Ruslan sighed and he rubbed his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: this is gonna be one of the longest 9 months of my life

\*\*\*he stood there and waited for her to come out...after she did her business she flushed and washed her hands then she walked out and found Ruslan standing there with his hands inside his pockets\*\*\*

Thandi: im hungry

\*\*\*he raised his eyebrow looking at her \*\*\*

Thandi: what?

\*\*\*he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Ruslan: umm nothing I just thought you're still angry at me that's all

Thandi: I am but your child is hungry so is there still food here?

\*\*\*he stopped himself from smiling\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah we cooked enough food

\*\*\*she walked passed him going to the kitchen and he smiled widely shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: this child better have mercy on me im too old for all this

\*\*\*he went after her...then his phone beeped and he checked it was a message from Castiel...he was telling him that he's going back to KZN but he'll come back in a few days' time....then his phone rang and it was an international call and he answered it\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah

Voice: dad

Ruslan: Carl

Carl: yeah how you doing....i saw you email

\*\*\*he said with a worried tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: im still kicking and my enemies still tremble at my presence

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Carl: good to know....umm you said the Brethren's are coming and that my long lost uncle is back on the email

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah apparently there's a new leader and he coming after Castiel and I well more like coming after me so I need to make sure that you're safe

\*\*\*Carl sighed\*\*\*

Carl: do they know your current location

Ruslan: they know we are in South Africa so it's a matter of time before they find the exact location we are at now

\*\*\*Carl sighed getting more worried\*\*\*

Carl: ok so what can I do...how can I help?

Ruslan: I want you close to me so I'll know you're safe

\*\*\*Carl sighed\*\*\*

Carl: what about school dad and mom you know she'll flip if I leave without a valid reason...even if you tell her the slight truth about why im coming to you she'll still flip and cause unnecessary drama

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed and he rubbed his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: I hear you my boy I just want you to be safe that's all

Carl: I know dad...look I'll be extra careful and during school recess I'll come to you how about that

\*\*\*Ruu sighed again\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok...you still got your potions and you still safe-proofing the house right

Carl: yeah....with the things I see dad I'd be a fool not to do all that

Ruslan: ok

Carl: and the prodigal uncle?

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: we buried the hatched but damn he's a pain in the ass

\*\*\*Carl laughed\*\*\*

Carl: so when I come to visit I'll meet him right?

Ruslan: yeah

Carl: I can't wait to see a real life Vamp....I've seen ghosts and demons to last me a life time now im gonna meet a Vamp who's my uncle damn

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: you know Carl im happy you're my son ...the way im so proud of you

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: you have no idea

Carl: I wish mom and her family accepts me the way I am like you do

Ruslan: I accept you and im proud of you every day so fuck them and their crazy ugly asses

\*\*\*Carl laughed\*\*\*



Carl: imagine how they'll act if they knew im a wizard and also a son to a wizard....a nephew to a Vampire/wizard and a grandson to a witch

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: I don't even wanna imagine it

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Carl: ok dad let me go we'll talk later....Jeremy is here

Ruslan: mmmmh remember no rubber no play there's not cure for Aids yet

Carl: DAD!

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: bye

\*\*\*he ended the call still laughing and Thandi came out of the kitchen with her half eaten food on a plate and she stood there looking at him with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Thandi: im angry at you and wena o busy wa tshega tshega....mmmm go monate go ba wena neh ( and you are busy laughing....mmmh it's nice to be you I see)

\*\*\* she said all that with a disgusted look on her face then she walked passed him going to the lounge and Ruslan chuckled shaking his head and he followed her\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*\*NIGERIA\*\*\*\*

\*\*\* They finally got Mj out of that room and he was still shaking with his sweatpants wet from his pee...he was sitting on a chair and he was drinking water with his shaky hands holding the bottle....he put the bottle down and he wiped his tears off looking down then Jabu and Heath sat in front of him on their own chairs\*\*\*

Heath: did you grow some balls in there or should we put you back in

\*\*\*He quickly looked at him shaking his head\*\*\*

Mj: no...no bros abeg I've learned my lesson

Heath: have you really?

Mj: ye...yes...yes

\*\*\*he said nodding repeatedly\*\*\*

Heath: good

Jabu: lwena tlogela go act(a) ekare o nyaope boy a tlhoka a fix man ( stop acting like a drug addict wanting a fix)

\*\*\*Heath laughed \*\*\*

Mj: bros not now ok abeg

Jabu: tsek o sa na le molomo le nou? ( you can still talk even now?)

Mj: mxm

Jabu: wetsetsa nna mxm? ( you're doing that mxm to me?)

Heath: mjava vag tuu ( Jabu wait please)

\*\*\*he said chuckling\*\*\*

Mj: im a man now bros so be careful or you'll regret it

Jabu: man ya go e thotela.... fotsek ( a man who pee on himself... piss off)

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Heath: I swear Mj will still talk even when he's dead....you should be quiet still scared about what you went through but no you're here locking horns with Jabu

Mj: im in a bad mood abeg so no vex me.....im sweating and I smell like shit so ya'll better leave me before someone loses his teeth ooo

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone then Jabu and Heath laughed looking at him\*\*\*

Jabu: o serious?

Mj: as a heart attack....i survived a heart attack in there so una no vex me im in a very bad mood

\*\*\*they laughed again\*\*\*

Jabu: mxm bona mo ntwana we all have phobias... ah ah die boy ( this boy)...gape a waya diheleng wa boya mna so chilexa (you didn't go to hell and came back so relax)

Mj: do you know how scary frogs are bros....besides the scary noises they make they are also scary as f...

Jabu: sampotsa ka digwagwa man a di tshose dilo tseo...mara wa jaja na gore rotwe e tshosa byang mmm? (don't tell me about frogs man those things are not scary...do you know how scary a rat is?)

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Mj: what's that

\*\*\*he asked confused\*\*\*

Heath: a big rat

Mj: mxm we eat giant rats as a delicacy here in Nigeria so abeg don't compare yourself with me

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: hei wena e seng a ko Alex aka Alexandra ....a le a ja lesega a le fetse le marapo a teng kao chaela ( hey not at that place called Alex aka Alexandra.... those rats eat a baby along with that baby's bones im telling you)

\*\*\*Heath laughed out loud\*\*\*

Jabu: heh I remember een dag maOulady a tswa stene a yo tlhoma mtlhatlhane ko Alex daar and a vaiya le nna (one day my mother went to look for her own place at a place called Alex she build a shack there and she left with me)

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Jabu: ....the following morning ke re ka tsoga ko shapa six-nine.... heh poi e rile ke bula matlho ka kereya rotwe next to my face on top of my pillow ntwana e gototse matlho ( I wanted to wake up and go take a piss....heh boy when I opened my eyes I found a huge rat next to my face on top of my pillow boy staring at me)

\*\*\*Heath and Mj laughed out loud\*\*\*

Jabu: ntwana ka goella e kare mei Oulady o bodile...I rile oulady a tsena a tlhaga ko ntle anker a ke nametse pala that was in the middle of the room holding the roofing gore e sa wela...ke le ko dimo ntwana ke goela blaen (boy I screamed as if my mother was dead.....and when my mother walked in coming from outside she found me up on the roof holding on tight to a pole that was in the middle of the room holding the roof so it doesn't cave in.....i was up there screaming my lungs out)

\*\*\*they continued to laugh\*\*\*

Jabu: nako eo moroto le lephyega le reng mo ngwaneng ( I even peed and shit myself)

\*\*\*they continued to laugh their lungs out\*\*\*

Jabu: bona dai deng ne e le kana ( it was this big)

\*\*\*he said showing them its "supposed" size\*\*\*

Jabu: im sure ke utlwile ebile rotwe ela e bolela ( im sure I even heard that rat talk)

Heath&Mj: haaah

\*\*\* They said at the same time indicating that he was lying and Jabu laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: ka le chaela man....im sure e rile " ro re o mang byanong wena"( im telling ya'll....im sure it said " who are we going to say you are " )

\*\*\*they laughed out loud with Mj holding his stomach\*\*\*

Jabu: ntwana same day oulady ampusetsa ko magriza and I never went back there again until ouladay a movela to another place (boy same day my mother took me back to my granny's house and I never went back there again until my mother moved to another place)

\*\*\*they continued to laugh\*\*\*

Jabu: and that's when my phobia ya bo rotwe( of rats) started

Mj: how old were you

\*\*\*he said still laughing\*\*\*

Jabu: 13.....then ka ya danyaneng and ka kereya skoroponyana sa ko laundry ka mo gare ga danyane wa bona (then I went to jail and I found some job to keep me busy in there)

\*\*\*then he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Jabu: heh.....one day ke le busy ka daar ka tlosa a pile of dirty sheets and clothes mo gatshe ke re ko lokela ka mo mocheneng then booom ka kereya di rotwe tsei two di jana missionary style baba(one day when I was busy in there I removed a pile of dirty sheets and clothes on the floor as I wanted to put them inside the washing machine then booom I found two rats fucking missionary style)

\*\*\*Heath and Mj busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

Jabu: mfowethu gore ke blome daar and ke di bogele di jana while ke teskomora ka ja fatshe.....ke tswile ka daar ka 120 ke tshela 1 blaen..... ke bile ka stopa ke vader mo passaging( my brother instead of standing there and watch them fuck each other while I masturbate I ran.....i ran like my life depended on it....i only stopped when a warden stopped me on the passage) ..... worse part I didn't even know where I was running to

\*\*\*\*Mj was now on the floor laughing his ass out\*\*\*

Jabu: and erile ge ke fetsa go botsa dai bari gore why ke tsogile a laga blaen (and after telling that fool why I was shaking like that he laughed at me) and right there and then I told myself that I have to fight off that stupid phobia cause it made me look like a wimp so I went back there and even though the rats where gone I told myself that I'll never fear borotwe (rats)....haaah nou rotwe nyana a fete mopelaka ke e leragela kwa e be ke e roge ka mmayona wa sfebe le papa yona wa go rota ka pele ( now if a rat passes next to me I'll kick it away and also swear at it about its mother who's a bitch and its father who nut quickly)

Heath: whooah Jabu...whoah man....my stomach hurts man

\*\*\*he said laughing while holding his stomach...as for Mj he couldn't even speak tears were just running down his face as he laughed his ass off\*\*\*

Jabu: so wa bona ntwana (so you see boy) we did that for your own good

\*\*\*heath and Mj just continued to laugh\*\*\*

Jabu: ai man fetsang go laga re bolele dilo tse serious ( finish laughing so we can talk some serious stuff)

\*\*\*they laughed until they stopped and Jabu gave them some time to calm down as he sat there with a smile on his face\*\*\*

Heath: wa bona wena Jabu you need to have your own comedy show...you need to go join Peter Mashata Mashabela Mashabela Sales man and others cause wa hlanya straight ( you are crazy straight)

Jabu: hai nka se loke mfowethu...ga pe nna ke hlanya nako eo eseng every day ( hai I won't survive it man cause I don't always act crazy)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Heath: yeah right

Jabu: kao chaela ( im telling you)

Mj: damn I should've recorded you

\*\*\*Anyway they talked to Mj and made him understand that he needs to grow up and set a good example for his nieces and nephews cause already Mpendulo and Sbu look up to him....they apologized for traumatizing him like that and they promised him that they'll make it up to him then they hugged it out\*\*\*

Mj: let's go I need a bath filled with warm water mixed with bleach

\*\*\*they laughed going to the car\*\*\*

Jabu: o reng moroto wa sbabo mongwaneng

\*\*\*they laughed with Mj busy chasing Jabu...then Heath smiled being thankful that Mj understood why they did what they did to him....he admits that it was extreme but they needed to really scare him for him to come down to earth....he was moving to South

Africa in a few months' time so he needs him to be focused cause their enemies might use him to get to them and he can't stomach the thought of anything bad happening to him or any of his family members all because of his childish behavior...he just wanted to toughen him a bit\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*\* MENZI'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

Menzi: are you sure you're ok

\*\*\*He asked Kazi who seemed lost in thoughts they were having breakfast the following morning...she was thinking about what Castiel said to her She wanted to think that maybe he was kidding but the seriousness of his voice made her think that he might be serious\*\*\*

Kazi: yeah it's just one of those days you know

\*\*\*Menzi sighed\*\*\*

Menzi: im here for you if you want to talk ok

\*\*\*She nodded smiling a bit\*\*\*

Menzi: so what time are you knocking off?

Kazi: angazi ( I don't know) maybe around six

Menzi: uyahlanya! ( you're mad!)

\*\*\*She laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: I knew you'd say that mxm

\*\*\*He smiled looking at her\*\*\*

Kazi: what?

Menzi: nex its just I can't believe you're mine

\*\*\*she looked at him with a raised eyebrow\*\*\*

Kazi: I didn't know I was yours mina

\*\*\*He chuckled picking his phone that indicated that he just received a message\*\*\*

Menzi: you can act clueless all you like sthandwa sam but deep down you know ukuthi ungowami ( that you're mine)

\*\*\*she laughed and he opened the message and read it and immediately the smile that was on his face vanished slowly\*\*\*

Kazi: is everything ok?

\*\*\*he cleared his throat getting up\*\*\*

Menzi: yeah its work.....I need to make a quick call I'll be right back ok

\*\*\*She nodded and he went over to her and kissed her forehead and he walked away dialing the numbers that send that message to him and it send him straight to voice mail and he clicked his tongue.....he then called his IT boy\*\*\*

Guy: boss

Menzi: Fingers I just received a message on my phone a minute or so ago and I want you to trace the numbers for me asap

Fingers: sure bozza

\*\*\*then he ended the call and he went back to Kazi\*\*\*

Kazi: you ok

Menzi: yeah

\*\*\*he kissed her cheek and sat down and he continued to eat his breakfast with a worried look on his face then his phone rang after some time and it was Fingers\*\*\*



Menzi: talk to me

Fingers: the numbers are from a burner phone boss so I can't trace them

Menzi: damn it!

\*\*\*He sighed\*\*\*

Menzi: its ok shap

\*\*\*he ended the call and when he looked up he found Kazi looking at him\*\*\*

Menzi: it's a work thing sthandwa sam but I'll sort it out don't worry

\*\*\*She sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: ok...I just hope it's nothing bad cause I can't handle a moody Menzi

\*\*\*Menzi chuckled\*\*\*

Menzi: aow since when because the last time I checked you could handle a moody me

Kazi: I was kidnapped Mapholoba so im very fragile

\*\*\*Menzi smiled wide and he leaned forward\*\*\*

Menzi: say my clan name again

\*\*\*She blushed\*\*\*

Kazi: hai suka...lets finish up so we can go

Menzi: ngiyakcela sthandwa sam....please

\*\*\*she giggled\*\*\*

Kazi: Mapholoba...happy now

\*\*\*He chuckled\*\*\*

Menzi: more than you'll ever know and from now on call me that

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: you should stop calling me Sthandwa sakho cause usaseskhathini sokulila man  
Menzi ( you should stop calling me your love cause you're still in a mourning period)

\*\*\*he gave her a bored look\*\*\*

Menzi: ungazong'bora Ntandokazi.... ekseni kangaka pho

\*\*\*He said with a woman's voice and she laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: anyway let's go tuu

Menzi: ujugeleni ( why are you in a hurry)

Kazi: dude I haven't been in my salon for quite a while now

\*\*\*She said standing up\*\*\*

Menzi: ubani udude Ntandokazi? ( who are you calling a dude Ntandokazi)

\*\*\*she laughed clearing the table and he got up and held her in place as she laughed\*\*\*

Menzi: ubani udude ( who are you calling a dude)

Kazi: no one now let me go

\*\*\*He then tickled her smiling and she laughed out loud trying to get off his hold\*\*\*

Kazi: MENZI...MENZI MAN STO...STOPPP

Menzi: ubani udude? ( who are you calling a dude)

\*\*\*he said still smiling as he tickled her\*\*\*

Kazi: im sorry...you're not a dude...you're not... please stoppp....i'll pee on myself man  
Menzi stoppp

\*\*\*He stopped and she hit him on his chest laughing and he held her hands and looked  
at her\*\*\*

Menzi: call me dude again and I'll tickle you until you pee on yourself ok

\*\*She tried to put up a serious face but she failed\*\*\*

Kazi: fine mxm

\*\*\*she tried to wiggle out of his hold but he kept her in place and he cupped her face with his right hand and he kissed her lips slowly she kissed him back and after some time they pulled out from the kiss and he looked into her eyes and she looked down shyly\*\*\*

Menzi: I love you Ntandokazi i may not be a perfect man but ngiyakthanda ( I love you)

\*\*\*she sighed and looked at him\*\*\*

Menzi: just give us a chance and I'll make you the happiest woman on earth...Please sthandwa sam

Kazi: you're still in mourning Menzi....can we talk about this after your mourning period....please

Menzi: mourning period yani Ntandokazi....i was cleansed hao

Kazi: married people stay about a year mourning for their spouses Menzi

Menzi: uyahlanya ( you are crazy).... a year yani....you want my dick to shrink neh

Kazi: ah ah

\*\*\*She said shocked\*\*\*

Menzi: hey angeke ngizilele omunye umfazi mina ( I won't mourn for another woman) while I sleep next to the one that holds my heart never!

Kazi: but it's for your own good Mapholoba and she was your wife not just any woman

Menzi: look you can call me Mapholoba all you want kodwa I was cleansed and im clean so mina nawe siyajola ksuka manje ( you and I are dating from now on)

\*\*\*She just looked at him shocked and he perked her lips and helped her clear the table\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*\*AT KAZI'S SALON\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*she walked in and she immediately stopped she wanted to turn back cause the place she just walked in looked nothing like hers....she frowned with her heart beating fast then she spotted her employees busy doing peoples hair and nails and she just stood there with her jaws hanging\*\*\*

Lady: OMG BOSS LADY!

\*\*\*one of her employees said rushing to her and she hugged her\*\*\*

Lady: OMG I can't believe you're here....when we heard about your kidnapping we were devastated

\*\*\*they all rushed to her and hugged her\*\*\*

Janet: don't worry I'll explain the revamp

\*\*\*the lady that manages her business when she's not around said seeing that Kazi was shocked by the complete revamp of her salon\*\*\*

Kazi: ok..ok...ok we will catch up later now back to work please

\*\*\*she said coming back from her shock and they all went back to their customers with smiles on their faces not believing that she was actually here alive.....then Kazi went to her office with Janet following her and as soon as the door to her office opened she froze\*\*\*

Janet: you like it boss lady?

\*\*\*Kazi looked around and walked in slowly then she turned and looked at Janet\*\*\*

Kazi: who... I mean I was still saving up for a revamp so who did this... I mean who paid for all this

Janet: Mr Ngcobo did when you were still missing

\*\*\*she went and sat down on her new leather office chair and she exhaled loudly not believing all this\*\*\*

Kazi: wow ummm and he never said anything since I came back

Janet: im sure he wanted to surprise you

\*\*\*she said smiling and Kazi sighed feeling emotional cause the place looked beautiful it looked like one of those expensive salons\*\*\*

Kazi: I can't believe he did this

\*\*\*She said with a low tone\*\*\*

Janet: you better hold on to him boss lady he's a keeper....anyway let me give you some time to regroup and I'll come back and fill you in on everything

Kazi: ummm yeah...thanks

Janet: umm before I go can I get you anything....Coffee juice or tea

Kazi: umm no thanks maybe later

Janet: ok and just so you know we even have a small kitchen which have a coffee machine microwave and a new fridge

\*\*\*she giggled and walked out and Kazi sighed then she took her phone and dialed Menzi with tears running down her cheeks\*\*\*

Menzi: you like it

\*\*\* she sniffed wiping her falling tears\*\*\*

Menzi: sthandwa sam...Ntandokazi?

Kazi: ye..yes I like it in fact I love it...Thank you Mapholoba

\*\*\*he breathed out\*\*\*

Menzi: im glad you do

Kazi: but you do know you didn't have to right

Menzi: I know but I wanted to

Kazi: well thank you.....so since I didn't ask you to go bankrupt because of me do I have to pay you back

Menzi: ungazongihlanyela Ntandokazi ( don't piss me off Ntandokazi)

\*\*\*She laughed\*\*\*

Menzi: the only thing you can do for me is agree to being mine and mine alone qa

\*\*\*she blushed\*\*\*

Kazi: mmmmh qeda ngesikhathi sakho sokulila ( finish with your mourning period) then I'll thank you properly...how's that?

Menzi: you serious?

Kazi: as a heart attack

\*\*\*Menzi laughed sounding excited\*\*\*

Menzi: ok but just so you know I was cleansed....anyway let me get back to work we will finish up with this conversation later at home

Kazi: ok

Menzi: ngiyakthanda uyezwa ( I love you)

\*\*\*she bit her lower lip\*\*\*

Kazi: yeah ngiyezwa ( I hear you)

\*\*\*he laughed and ended the call then she breathed out and looked up smiling then she froze....Castiel was standing by the closed door with a pissed off look on his face\*\*\*

Kazi: how...how did you get in...I ....i didn't hear the door op...

Castiel: I snuck in

\*\*\*He said dismissing her then he locked the door and walked to her as she stood up feeling uneasy....in fact she was scared\*\*\*

Castiel: I won't hurt you so relax

\*\*\*he sat on the edge of the table facing her\*\*\*

Castiel: sit!

\*\*\*she slowly sat down and he looked at her with a serious look on her face\*\*\*

Kazi: what...what are you doing here?

Castiel: I see you thought I was joking when I told you not to let that boy touch you

\*\*\*Kazi swallowed hard and she breathed out and she gained the courage and she pulled a straight face\*\*\*

Kazi: first of all im not yours Castiel or whatever your name is and secondly you won't tell me what to do or who to date or let alone tell me that I shouldn't let another man touch me where else you're nothing to me

\*\*\*he raised an eyebrow looking at her\*\*\*

Castiel: im nothing to you huh?

\*\*\*she just looked at him\*\*\*

Castiel: so you don't find me attractive?...or you don't wish to taste how my lips tastes like? or you don't wish to feel my strong arms around your sexy body?

\*\*\*He said as he remembered how she thought of him that time they met while she was shopping and she swallowed hard with her eyes slightly popped out and her jaws hanging a bit cause now she was thinking of his cologne how good it smells and how good looking he is even though she was a bit scared of him\*\*\*

Castiel: you don't want me Charlotte?

\*\*\*she blinked fast as she tried to compose herself also surprised that he knew her other name\*\*\*

Castiel: answer me

Kazi: no I...i don't

Castile: is it?

\*\*\*he said as he raised his eyebrow at her in a cute way with a slight smirk on his face\*\*\*

Kazi: yes now can you leave

\*\*\*he chuckled and he moved and leaned over to her face.....their faces were inches away from each other\*\*\*

Kazi: what...what are you doing?

\*\*\*she asked with a low tone\*\*\*

Castiel: do you wanna know why I say you're mine Charlotte.....

\*\*\*she swallowed hard looking at him\*\*\*

Castiel: it's because I can make you wet without even touching you

\*\*\*she gasped\*\*\*

Kazi: can...can you just leave Castiel...please

Castiel: your mind says one thing and your mouth is saying another thing Charlotte.....so which one is it...to fuck you here and now or to leave?

\*\*\*she swallowed hard wondering how he knew what she was thinking.... she frowned looking at him with her mind now all over the place...." HOW THE FUCK DID HE KNOW?" is what she thought\*\*\*

Castiel: I know cause im one of the blessed ones in this world now im waiting for my answer Charlotte

\*\*\*he said smirking and he leaned closer and stared into her eyes and she stared back too trying to keep his gaze but she failed and she looked away with her heart pounding hard\*\*\*

Castiel: you know I can fuck you hard now and you'll cum all over this table shaking like a leaf



\*\*\*her breath hinged as she became wet instantly and he got closer to a point that their noses nearly touched\*\*\*

Castiel: or I can eat your pussy up so hard that you end up coming all over my face hard with your body shaking like a leaf

\*\*\*she swallowed hard closing her thighs tight as she felt her lace thong getting wetter by the second\*\*\*

Castiel: no open them why are you closing them huh?

\*\*\*her chest was now moving up and down as she was breathing hard\*\*\*

Castiel: I said open them Charlotte

\*\*\*she swallowed hard again and she opened her thighs slowly\*\*\*

Castiel: so which one is it Charlotte....what do you want me to do?

\*\*\*she just sat there swallowing hard repeatedly as if something was stuck on her throat\*\*\*

Castiel: im already hard as fuck all I need to do is put you on top of this table with your legs wide open and I'll just pull your underwear aside or I'll just rip it off and slide in my dick inside your juicy wet pussy and let your pussy walls hug my gigantic cock as I stand there not moving an inch letting you get used to it and when I decide to finally move baby you'll call all your clan names word by word until an electrifying orgasm wash over your entire body and you'll scream out loud like a person who's seeing a ghost....and from there on I'll fuck your brains out until you pass out

\*\*\*she gasped as she released her juices on her underwear and her thighs shook as her bottom lip trembled\*\*\*

Castiel: you'll pass out and wake up and you'll still find me fucking you good

Kazi: sto...stop....

\*\*\*he smirked as he watched her catching her breath and he leaned back and he stood up straight and the visible bulge on his jeans was evident enough that he was packing pretty well down there\*\*\*

Castiel: mmmmh and you're wearing a skirt nc nc nc

\*\*\*\*he said moving to the other side of the table and he fixed his bulge and he looked at Kazi who was trying to compose herself now feeling extremely embarrassed\*\*\*\*

Castiel: now you see why I say you're mine Charlotte.....i can make you cum without touching you so image what I can do as I held you in place fucking you good with deep strokes as I go in and out of you nice and slow

Kazi: Castiel ple..please don...jeez stop talking

\*\*\*he chuckled and he went to the door and he stopped and turned and he had a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Castiel: this is your first strike Charlotte....

\*\*\*He then unlocked and opened the door\*\*\*

Castiel: don't forget to clean yourself up.

\*\*\*he got out closing the door behind him\*\*\*

Kazi: Jesus Christ

\*\*\*she said looking between her legs with her heart still pounding hard against her chest\*\*\*

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

INSERT.....18

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*After Kazi cleaned herself up she called Janet in and Janet briefed her on everything and went back to work after that...right then her phone rang it was her cousin Phumi and she answered\*\*\*

Kazi: babe hey

Phumi: hey hey...how's you bathong

Kazi: ngiright wena ( im alright and you)

Phumi: im always super you know that so are you ready to host me mogirl

\*\*\*Kazi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: ofcourse... yho I miss you

Phumi: I miss you too babe so im gonna take the morning bus so I'll arrive there go sa le early neh

Kazi: so o serious you'll never catch a flight

Phumi: never... I don't want it to explode with me inside yho I cant shem....i mean don't even have kids babe so I need to leave a little Phumiyana wa maminanyana( a little Phumi with some snorts on her face) before I die

\*\*\*Kazi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: gosh Phumelele mara

Phumi: yho hai leave me tuu....anyway let me go back to work we will talk later ok

Kazi: ok shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and Kazi laughed shaking her head....well she wanted to buy a plane ticket for her but she blatantly refused cause she said she doesn't want it to explode in the sky with her inside\*\*\*

LATER IN THE EVENING AT MENZI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*they were having supper and Kazi's mind was far she was playing with her food around the plate and Menzi could see something was bothering her\*\*\*

Menzi: sthandwa sam

Kazi: mmmmh

Menzi: what's wrong?

Kazi: mmmmh

Menzi: KAZI!

\*\*\*he said raising his voice and she snapped out of it\*\*\*

Kazi: ye...yes?

Menzi: where's your mind at?

\*\*\*he asked with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Kazi: umm.... its here

Menzi: don't make a fool Ntandokazi I can see something serious is occupying your mind....what's wrong?

Kazi: ummm its nothing Mapholoba...I just can't stop thinking about my renovated salon

\*\*\*she lied she was thinking about what Castiel did to her earlier on she couldn't believe that actually happened to her and now she wondered how he is in bed if he can make her cum without touching her.... Anyway Menzi gave her an intense look and she looked down feeling guilty\*\*\*

Kazi: ummm also that.... that you're good for me....I was asking myself why im giving you such a tough time cause i know I still love you and i...I want to be with you so I was just asking myself questions nje

\*\*\*She thought of a good enough lie quickly\*\*\*

Menzi: what questions?

\*\*\* "ooh God" she thought\*\*\*

Kazi: that do I want to wait or to just go with the flow you know..... I mean life is too short and tonight might be my last or your last and I don't want any regrets Menzi...eish I don't know if I make sense

Menzi: what regrets Ntandokazi?

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: of giving you a chance...of giving us a chance

\*\*\*Menzi breathed out and he looked at her\*\*\*

Menzi: ufuna ukhithi Ntandokazi ( what are you trying to say Ntandokazi)

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Kazi: that no more waiting....no more playing hard to get....i love you Menzi and I want to...to be with you

\*\*\*Menzi face changed and you could see he was getting emotional\*\*\*

Menzi: you mean that Ntandokazi?

Kazi: yeah

\*\*\*she said nodding and he got up and went to her and pulled her up....he just cupped her face looking into her eyes with nothing but love\*\*\*

Menzi: I love you

\*\*\*she swallowed\*\*\*

Kazi: I love you too Menzi

\*\*\*he leaned in and they kissed passionately....after some time they pulled out of the kiss and he kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Menzi: ngiyakthanda yezwa ( I love you you hear me)

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Kazi: nami ngiyakthanda yezwa( I love you too you hear me)

\*\*\*they both laughed then she bit her lower lip\*\*\*

Kazi: im ready

\*\*\*he raised an eyebrow\*\*\*

Menzi: ready?

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Kazi: please ....ummm....make love to me Mapholoba

\*\*\*Menzi looked at her with his eyes popped out then he composed himself and he breathed out\*\*\*

Menzi: are you sure?

\*\*\*she nodded biting her lower lip and he licked his lips and he leaned in and they kissed again.....soon the kiss got heated and Menzi grabbed her butt cheeks and he lifted her up and she wrapped her legs around his waist with her hands around his neck and he went to the bedroom with her as they kissed hungrily\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*He entered her slowly and stopped moving as he clenched his jaws while Kazi moaned digging her nails into his flesh on his back\*\*\*

Menzi: fuck I missed you Ntandokazi....i fucken missed you

\*\*\*he bend down and they kissed with him moving slowly missionary style while she wrapped her legs around his waist\*\*\*

Kazi: mmmmh

\*\*\*she moaned as they kissed then her mind went to Castiel and what he did to her earlier but he was brought back to her senses when he increased his pace and that made her to moan louder\*\*\*

Kazi: fuck Ca....Menzi fuck!

\*\*\*she said as she felt nothing but pure pleasure as he went deeper...as for Menzi he increased his pace thrusting in and out of her \*\*\*

Menzi: look at me Ntandokazi

\*\*\*she did moaning while biting her lower lip\*\*\*

Menzi: I love you yezwa

\*\*\*she nodded and he went deeper and she groaned\*\*\*

Kazi: fuck baby!

\*\*\*he smirked and dropped on top of her and he held her with his head buried on her neck\*\*\*

Menzi: drop your legs baby

\*\*\*she did and she opened them wider and he started fucking her going faster and she lost her mind..... he went in and out of her as he groaned and his sexy groans drove her insane\*\*\*

Kazi: ooh yes Mapholoba...yes baby fuck me harder baby!

\*\*\*she said and he lost his mind....his hands immediately went to her ass and he grabbed it tight pulling her lower body up a bit and he went deeper and faster and that's when an unexpected orgasm hit her and she screamed and yep Mapholoba fucked her through it.....well after a few thrusts he went in and out of her faster groaning loud and she knew he was near so she held his tight and he went faster and faster then he slammed into her and he groaned loud pushing his dick deeper and deeper then he cursed and stayed on that position for some time trying to catch his breath then he pulled himself up and he slid out and he watched as his juices dripped from her nana on to the bed and her hand went to her pussy and she smeared them all over her pussy moaning and he bit his lower lips then he bend and perked her lips....he got out of bed

and he went to the bathroom and he came back with a wet towel and he cleaned her he then got out of bed again and he pulled her to the edge of the bed where he stood\*\*\*

Kazi: shit baby.....

\*\*\*She said with a low tone\*\*\*

Menzi: im not yet done with you sthandwa sam....

\*\*\*he said as he stood between her legs with his semi hard dick and he opened them wide and he positioned himself\*\*\*

Menzi: ngiyakthanda yezwa ( I love you)

\*\*\*she nodded and he slid in and he groaned while she moaned\*\*\*

Menzi: damn I swear your pussy will be my downfall sthandwa sam

\*\*\*he started moving and she continued to moan loud while holding on the bedcovers as he fucked her.....well he fucked her good until a violent orgasm hit her and he stopped moving and he pulled out then turned her around with her body still shaking from the orgasm and he slid in from the back with his left hand holding her natural hair and his right hand holding her waist tight and he continued fucking her deep and fast as she held on to the bedcovers screaming her lungs out cause nigga was tearing her nana apart but the pleasure she was also feeling was just out of this world....

Well the second round lasted longer and by the time he was done with her she couldn't feel her pussy and she was even struggling to keep her eyes open but Menzi wasn't done cause he was still hard so after cleaning her up he pushed her to the middle of the bed and turned her on lay on her back and he slid in her missionary style again and fucked her brains out\*\*\*

-----



\*\*\*In the early hours of the morning she woke up to Menzi sliding in her and she flinched cause she was sore down there..... he then started thrusting in and out of her and she moaned out loud as soon as the pain disappeared he then he pulled her legs up putting them on his shoulders and he started moving in and out of her slowly\*\*\*

Kazi: Gosh Menzi....

Menzi: yes baby

\*\*\*he said as he increased his pace a bit and she moaned louder holding tight to his arms\*\*\*

Menzi: ahhh.... ahhh.... ahhh...damn baby!

\*\*\*that's what he said with his bold voice as he enjoyed her wet nana.... he went faster hitting the right spot and an unexpected orgasm hit her and she screamed shaking and he didn't stop he went harder chasing his own happy ending and after a few thrusts he slammed into her pushing himself deeper and he groaned from deep down his throat and he cursed\*\*\*

Menzi: FUCK....

\*\*\*he dropped her legs and bends down and perked her lips\*\*\*

Menzi: fuck that was good sthandwa sam

\*\*\*she smiled at him lazily and she just closed her eyes and he pulled out and he went between her legs and kissed her pussy and took the towel and wiped both of them.....he then laid next to her and pulled her closer and she rested her head on his hard chest and they both fell asleep again....

Now they both just finished getting ready for work but before they went to shower Kazi woke up to Menzi having her in a spooning position and after they were done they went to shower and had another round in there....as for Kazi her nana was still numb and she hoped that she'll be able to walk properly and not like someone who still has an invisible dick between her legs\*\*\*

Menzi: you sure you'll be able to concentrate today at work

\*\*\*He said teasing her and she laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: leave me tuu

\*\*\*he chuckled looking happy....it was like a huge weight was lifted off his shoulders he felt light and happy....the way he's happy you wouldn't even miss the smile that is plastered on his face....he was like a small child who was just given candy it was just cute to watch him like that\*\*\*

Kazi: so you gonna smile like that the whole day?

\*\*\*he pulled her closer and perked her lips\*\*\*

Menzi: im a happy man sthandwa sam and today my employees are gonna see that

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: what did my pussy do to you Mapholoba....i mean I've never seen you this happy

\*\*\*he sighed and he put his forehead on hers and they stayed like that for some time\*\*\*

Menzi: you know sthandwa sam when you were abducted...

\*\*\*he sighed and pulled his head back and he looked into her eyes\*\*\*

Menzi: I almost lost my mind....i didn't know what to do with myself....i swear beksele kancane nje ukuthi ngihlanye ngamapela ( it was just a matter of time before I lost my mind for real)

\*\*\*he sighed and she wrapped her arms around his waist looking up at him\*\*\*

Menzi: and when I saw you lying in that hospital bed after they left you outside the police station I vowed that I'll live the rest of my life making you happy.....i vowed that I'll wife you and grow old with you and our kids

\*\*\*Kazi became emotional thinking about Castiel and what he did to her....she felt guilty like she cheated on Menzi\*\*\*

Kazi: I love you Mapholoba

\*\*\*he perked her lips\*\*\*

Menzi: I love you too sthandwa sam....so when will Phumi arrive this side

Kazi: I don't know but she said she will communicate with me so if she doesn't get me on my phone she's call you ok

Menzi: ok let's go eat I have a meeting out of town

\*\*\*then Kazi's phone beeped indicating that a message came through and she opened and read it and the message says:

"I see you thought I was joking when I said don't let that boy touch what's mine and now you let him fuck you nc nc nc "

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Menzi: you ok?

Kazi: arg yah....lets go babe

\*\*\*they walked out\*\*\*

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Mbali: but dad I miss her she can't just abandon me like this

\*\*\*She said sulking \*\*\*

Pops: ma would never abandon you princess right now she's busy touring the world with her husband before their ancestors remember them haw

\*\*\* he lied and she sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: I know im being silly and childish about this but I just miss her so much daddy

Pops: I know baby I miss her too

\*\*\*she was talking to her father on the phone....she was sulking cause she couldn't get hold of her grandmother and Pops lied to her by saying Ma and baba are traveling the world but in actually fact she's undergoing chemotherapy overseas she didn't want her grandchildren know about it cause she knew they'll leave their families and businesses to come and be with her but more especially stress about her and she doesn't want that her son and husband knowing was enough for her to keep fighting hard\*\*\*

Pops: tell you what I'll call baba and tell him to tell ma to call you how's that

Mbali: but why can't I call him myself

Pops: tjeeerrr who's child are you Princess

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: yours haw

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: I miss you daddy

Pops: I miss you too my princess....so how's the little one treating you

Mbali: he's behaving if you know what I mean

\*\*\*she said and chuckled\*\*\*

Pops: you know im not happy with the fact that you know about his demon and Ray's demon too

Mbali: well I know about your beast so you happy with me knowing that daddy

Pops: don't get smart with me young lady

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: look now I know that the world is not as black and white as everyone thinks it is dad and that every family has their own secrets and im glad I know about my family secrets cause they opened my eyes and now I can see clearly and im not that naïve little girl anymore

\*\*\*Pops sighed \*\*\*

Mbali: don't worry daddy even if I grow old with grey hair I'll always be your little girl...i'll always sulk to you and cry to you so you haven't lost me and you'll never lose me ok

Pops: I love you baby

\*\*\*he said with an emotional voice\*\*\*

Mbali: I love you too daddy....

\*\*\*then she heard someone speaking with a foreign language\*\*\*

Pops: I have to go baby I'll let baba know ok

Mbali: ok dad

\*\*\*they ended the call and she sighed\*\*\*

Ray: are you really as grown as you claim you are

\*\*\*she turned and found him standing behind her\*\*\*

Mbali: yep

Ray: really....so what you did to me and my things is you acting like a grown up?

Mbali: nope that was me acting like a scorned angry mad black woman

\*\*\*he looked at her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Mbali: and that wasn't me disrespecting you nooo because I know one more hard slap from you will land me in hospital this time and if Saint "the demon" try to fight for me La Parca will send him to hell along with my son's soul since they are attached to one another so I wasn't trying to disrespect you I was just lashing out

\*\*\*He just looked at her...there was something different about her I was just lashing out

\*\*\*He just looked at her...there was something different about her that innocent and childish vibe she used to give was gone\*\*\*

Ray: lashing out you say?

\*\*\*she nodded and Ray came around and he sat down not far from her\*\*\*

Ray: so every time I fuck up you'll...."lash out"

Mbali: nope but every time you cheat on me I'll..."lash out" and be rest assured that I'll leave no stone unturned my love

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: is that so?

Mbali: yep

Ray: mmmm

Mbali: so....do you still love me or your love for me died with your Maserati and expensive whiskey

\*\*\*he didn't say anything he just looked at her sitting back\*\*\*

Mbali: ohk

\*\*\*she got up feeling disappointed and hurt and she started walking away but he stopped her\*\*\*

Ray: come here

\*\*\*she stopped swallowed and turned to look at him\*\*\*

Ray: come here jorr!

\*\*\*she sighed and walked to him and he pulled her to sit on his lap facing him then he squeezed her ass\*\*\*

Ray: you should know I'll never stop loving you my flower

\*\*\*she smiled\*\*\*

Mbali: you haven't called me your flower in a while now

Ray: and whose fault is it

Mbali: yours haw

Ray: my fault?...mxm you dey mad ( you're crazy)

\*\*\*she laughed and he wrapped his arm around her pulling her closer and he kissed her lips....she smiled kissing him back and he chuckled and stopped kissing her\*\*\*

Ray: couldn't you wait until we done kissing before you can grin like that

\*\*\*she giggled shaking her head\*\*\*

Mbali: no...I haven't felt your lips on mine in a while now so the kiss was a bit ticklish

\*\*\*Ray laughed\*\*\*

Ray: and she says she's a grown ass woman now

Mbali: mxm

\*\*\*she said pushing him but he tightened the grip around her\*\*\*

Ray: im sorry I hurt you my flower....im sorry I made you cry

\*\*\*she sighed and rested her head between his neck and shoulder\*\*\*

Mbali: and im sorry I disrespected you but im not sorry for "lashing out " though

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: do you know how much that Maserati and whiskey cost my flower

Mbali: im sure you know how priceless my heart is angithi (right) and you broke it

\*\*\*He sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: so there's nothing that you own that will amount to you comparing that thing or things to my broken heart

\*\*\*he didn't say anything\*\*\*

Mbali: but im over all that so I need you to do me a favour for me to be really really really over all that

\*\*\*she said raising her head to look at him\*\*\*

Ray: im listening?

Mbali: I need you to set up a meeting with that bitch called Selinah or Celine whatever her name is

\*\*\*his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Ray: what?

Mbali: mmmmh I need to have a small talk with her woman to woman

\*\*\*Ray shook his head\*\*\*

Ray: not happening

Mbali: you do know I can make the meeting happen without you my love angithi

\*\*\*he gave her an intense look\*\*\*

Mbali: please man Ray....please do it for me

Ray: it's not happening Mbali...that woman is dangerous and I told you that I don't want you involved in any way with anyone from the underworld

Mbali: please.....

\*\*\*she said giving him her puppy dog eyes\*\*\*

Ray: those puppy dog eyes won't work this time...

Mbali: don't make me blackmail you into setting up the meeting baby

\*\*\*He raised his eyebrow looking at her and she tried to keep a straight face but she ended up laughing\*\*\*

Mbali: sthandwa sam please....you can be present if you want I just want to talk to her that's all

Ray: talk to her about what?



Mbali: this and that...look I want to make it clear to her that she should keep her beef with you away from my marriage that's all

\*\*\*she lied....what she planned for her was....yeah I can't even say it\*\*\*

Ray: if that's all then I'll make sure she gets the message

Mbali: baby please im begging you just set up the meeting tuu

Ray: I said no Mbali!

Mbali: mxm fine then I'll find another way to meet up with her

\*\*\*she said trying to get off him and he tightened the grip around her\*\*\*

Ray: where do you think you're going?

Mbali: im not talking to you so let me go

\*\*\*she said faking a sulk and she tried to get out of his hold but he held her tight\*\*\*

Ray: really now

Mbali: yeah

\*\*\*she said looking away and he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: I can see you're faking a sulk my flower.....i know your real sulking-face so drop the act

\*\*\*a smile forced its way on her face\*\*\*

Mbali: mxm...Ray please I just wanna talk to her

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ray: fine I'll think about it

Mbali: ok but don't take too long or I'll find other means to set up the meeting

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ray: I did mention she's dangerous Mbali and she also has a foul mouth and she's manipulative and conniving

Mbali: and you're forgetting im a mother to a demon and a wife to La Parca's carrier

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Mbali: these women need to know that im not a walk-over Ray or one of those spoiled rotten wives....i can kick ass and I also have a foul mouth too

Ray: which women?

Mbali: those stupid women you do business with

\*\*\*he laughed not believing that this was his flower\*\*\*

Mbali: mmmmh your cheating ways unleashed a beast in me so qaphela ndoda ( be careful man)

Ray: wait what did you say in Zulu?

Mbali: Google it!

\*\*\*she said laughing and he tickled her and she screamed while laughing\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Kazi went to pick Phumi up and they went to the mall to buy groceries for Phumi since she refused to stay with Menzi and Kazi in Menzi's house she said she likes walking around in her underwear especially in the morning so she doesn't want to tempt Menzi she also said she doesn't want to listen to them fucking every night while she left her boyfriend back home so she's gonna stay at Kazi's house during her visit... Well Phumi was a beautiful woman she was a chubby girl but not too chubby she has smooth caramel skin with nicely cut short hair...all in all she was the younger version of Jill Scott ( the singer and actress) she has that million dollar smile Jill Scott has and her nice and sweet but fierce when she's pissed voice was the cherry on top \*\*\*

Phumi: hai wena you mean to tell me ukuthi nigga made you cum without touching or fucking you

Kazi: yep

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Phumi: ithi uyadlala Kazi ( say you kidding Kazi)

Kazi: im dead serious Phumi and the bulge below his belt was a clear indication ukuthi hey nigga uthwele inkunzimalanga (he's packing)

\*\*\*they busted out with laughter\*\*\*

Phumi: Jezos!

\*\*\*they continued laughing\*\*\*

Kazi: im telling you Phumza....i was dripping down there I had to work the rest of the day without wearing underwear cause it was papnut (wet)

Phumi: so what about bae wa diwheelbarrow ( the wheelbarrow bae)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: well we made it official last night and nigga fucked me good shem

Phumi: heh Kazi o deal(a) le bo bae ba diwheelbarrow le dimagician mmmh...thatha wena girl ( you deal with wheelbarrow bae and a magician...its nice to be you girl)

\*\*\*Kazi pushed Phumi and they laughed...they moved along picking things from the shelves\*\*\*

Kazi: well truth is I love Menzi and with Castiel well all I can say is I'd give anything to have him for one night nje.....Phumza you should have seen his bulge and when he was looking into my eyes and talking dirty to me it was like he was speaking to my soul

\*\*\*Phumi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: his eyes are creepy but yesterday they were the sexiest shit ever

\*\*\*they both laughed as they moved along\*\*\*

Phumi: so do you love the guy?

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: I don't know...I'll decide after having sex with him

Phumi: hah Kazi

\*\*\*Kazi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: im kidding jeez....yho Menzi would kill me if he finds out...I think its lust im feeling for him but yeses nigga is handsome and he's packing

Phumi: ai shem wa bona wena I'll pray for you shem ( I'll pray for you shame)

Kazi: please pray for me tuu....i think bayangithakatha ( I think they are bewitching me)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Voice: lust huh?

\*\*\*they both turned and Kazi's eyes popped out while Phumi just frowned\*\*\*

Kazi: Ca...Castiel

Castiel: I see you two fucked huh... well I hope you enjoyed yourself

\*\*\* " ohh shit he heard us" she thought and Castiel chuckled as he read her mind\*\*\*

Phumi: Castiel as in...

\*\*\*She whispered to Kazi and she nodded and she faked a smile looking at Castiel who had a frown on his face...he was looking at Phumi trying to read her mind but he couldn't....Phumi saw that he was looking at her with an intense look and she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Phumi: jeez no need to give me that look I'll give you two some privacy

\*\*\*She said and she pushed their trolley away but Castiel still kept his gaze at her until Kazi cleared her throat\*\*\*

Castiel: who is she?

Kazi: my cousin...why?

\*\*\*she said frowning\*\*\*

Castiel: mmm

\*\*\*then he went after her leaving Kazi standing there\*\*\*

Castiel: hey

\*\*\*she turned\*\*\*

Phumi: hi

Castiel: have we met before?

\*\*\*he said as he tried to read her mind and still nothing it was like she was immune to his abilities\*\*\*

Phumi: I doubt it

\*\*\*she said and she looked over at Kazi and Kazi had a displeased look on her face\*\*\*

Castiel: don't worry about her she made a wrong choice now she needs to live with it

Phumi: huh?

Castiel: anyway are both your parents South African?

Phumi: askies

Castiel: just answer me jeez!

Phumi: hei don't give me that attitude ok....i don't know you and you don't me and I don't have to answer any of your questions nx

\*\*\*He kept on looking at her trying to read her mind and still nothing was happening \*\*\*

Castiel: can you just answer me

Kazi: what's going on here

Phumi: ask your boyfriend here...he's acting weird and asking me stupid questions

\*\*\*She said and pushed her trolley and Castiel's eyes were still glued on her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Kazi: Cass

\*\*\*He looked at her\*\*\*

Castiel: what?

\*\*\*she swallowed\*\*\*

Kazi: why are you looking at Phumi like that?

\*\*\* " her name is Phumi...mmmmh interesting" he thought\*\*\*

Castiel: what is it to you?

\*\*\*she gasped\*\*\*

Kazi: she's my cousin for God's sake

Castiel: so?

\*\*\*she looked at him shocked then he walked away leaving her standing like a statue....and he took out his phone and called Ruslan\*\*\*

Ruu: Cass

Castiel: Madou something weird just happened now

Ruslan: no greetings you just started with the matter at hand...tell me here Cass who's your father mmmmh

Castiel: not now Madou this is serious man!

Ruslan: greet me first then we will discuss whatever happened

\*\*\*Castiel sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: fine.....how are you Madou

Ruslan: im scared of my pregnant wife to be and how are you Cass?

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: serves you right

Ruslan: fuck you....anyway what's wrong

Castiel: I met some girl....well she's Kazi's cousin and I can't read her mind like literally cant man

Ruslan: what do mean by "you can't read her mind"?

Castiel: just like you can't read minds Madou...it's like she's immune to my abilities

Ruslan: ok has something like this happened to you before

Castiel: no never...even with Juana when I still thought she's an innocent human I had to do a spell on her that prevented me from reading her mind

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok let me do some research on this and I'll get back to you

Castiel: ok be fast about it....this shit is fucking with my head man....something is.....why can't I read her man

Ruslan: calm down I'll figure it out

Castiel: ok later

\*\*\*they ended the call and Castiel sighed and he went to the parking lot\*\*\*

\*\* BACK TO KAZI.....anyway after sometime she composed herself and went after Phumi\*\*\*

Kazi: what did he say to you Phumelele

\*\*\*she said with a serious tone and Phumi frowned\*\*\*

Phumi: he asked if my parents are both South African

Kazi: don't lie to me Phumelele...dont!

\*\*she said with a voice laced with a bit of anger\*\*

Phumi: bathong and nou?

\*\*\*she said surprised by her sudden change of attitude towards her\*\*

Phumi: first of all that guy is creepy and arrogant Kazi and if you think I'm interested in that then you don't know me at all....your creepy boyfriend asked me about my parents and that's all jeez

\*\*\*Kazi face soften up a bit and she blinked fast\*\*

Kazi: I..... ummm

Phumi: nx

\*\*\*she walked away and Kazi sighed...she wondered why she acted that way....."does it mean I have fallen for the guy" she thought.....she then went after Phumi to apologize\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Well Kazi apologized and they hugged it out and continued with their shopping then later they drove to Kazi's place and spend the rest of the day catching up while eating junk food then later in the afternoon Kazi left and Phumi watched a movie having snacks until she passed out on the couch....she woke up to a knock on the door and her heard started beating fast.....she got up and went to the kitchen and she took a knife and a pan and she went to the door as the knock intensified\*\*

Phumi: who is it?

Voice: its Castiel open up

\*\*\*she froze with a frown on her face\*\*

Castiel: Phumi open up man neighbors may start thinking that im a burglar or something.....i don't wanna be burned alive with a tire around my neck

Phumi: Kazi is not here man so leave tuu



Castiel: im not here for her

Phumi: if you want me to talk to her for you then im sorry to disappoint you....she's old enough to make her own decisions so hamba tuu ( go please)

\*\*\*Castiel sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: im not here for her are you deaf....i fucken said im here for you now open up so we can talk

Phumi: don't you dare talk to me like that...im not Kazi uyangizwa (you hear me)... nx you know what entlek leave now before I call the cops

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled he could tell now that she's not a pushover\*\*\*

Castiel: fine I apologize for talking to you like that now can you open up.....please

\*\*\*she slowly opened the door but she didn't open the security door and Castiel chuckled when he saw the knife and pan on her hands \*\*\*

Phumi: what?

Castiel: I see you're ready for thieves huh

Phumi: mmmmh and I know how to use them now what are you doing here

\*\*\*his face got serious...he still couldn't read her mind and it was frustrating him more and more\*\*\*

Castiel: is one of your close family members preferably your mother father or grandparents witches or wizards?

Phumi: askies?

\*\*\*she said giving him a deadly look\*\*\*

Castiel: is there a witch or wizard in your family?

Phumi: VOETSEK MSUNU!

\*\*\*then she slammed the door on his face and she locked and went back to the lounge....leaving Castiel shocked then he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: ok maybe I should've found a better way to ask her that

\*\*\*he said to himself and knocked again\*\*\*

INSERT.....19

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*SOMETHING SHORT...ENJOY!\*\*\*\*

Castiel: Phumi come on I just want to know

\*\*\*She ignored him until he decided to leave cause he knew he couldn't enter the house without her permission....cause Vampires can't enter a private household without the current occupant/ occupants verbally telling them to enter....after Phumi realised that he left she took her phone and dialed Kazi's numbers\*\*\*

Kazi: babe

Phumi: hey look here Kazi please warn your weird and arrogant boyfriend to stay the hell away from me cause I know people Kazi in fact you know that I know people ko kasi ( back in the hood) and he can disappear just like that without a trace so warn him assomblief!

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Kazi: wait.... you mean Castiel?

\*\*\*she said whispering his name\*\*\*

Phumi: yes....lomgodoyi wenja ( that useless dog) came here and I thought he was looking for you then boom he said he's looking for me instead and you won't believe what he wanted to know

\*\*\*Kazi swallowed hard and jealousy creeped in\*\*\*

Kazi: he...he said that?

Phumi: yes then he asked me a stupid and insulting question....in fact msoono o le insulted me and my family Kazi

Kazi: ummm

\*\*\*\*she was confused now\*\*\*

Phumi: he asked me if raloya ko gae imagine! (he asked me if we use witchcraft at home)

Kazi: what?

Phumi: imagine.... sebeta sa ramarete ole ( the nerve of that dick)...im sorry he's your boyfriend mara marete a gae nx ( but his testicles )...who the hell does he think he is

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice \*\*\*

Kazi: wow...ummm let me call him and hear ukuthi yini inkinga yakhe ( what's his problem)

Phumi: do so and warn him about me Kazi....im a dangerous chubby girl and I know dangerous people back at home

Kazi: I will trust me I'll make sure he knows

\*\*\*she faked a laugh\*\*\*

Phumi: good

Kazi: ok let me call him

Phumi: shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and she looked around and Menzi wasn't in sight then she dialed Castiel's numbers\*\*\*

Castiel: what is it?

\*\*\*she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Kazi: hey it's Kazi

Castiel: I know now what do you want

\*\*\*she swallowed hurt by his sudden rude and cold attitude towards her\*\*\*

Kazi: ummm Phumi called me and she said you came by my house

Castiel: I did so?

Kazi: she's angry about what you asked her

Castiel: why are you calling me Kazi

Kazi: why were you there in the first place Castiel I mean you don't even know Phumi

Castiel: udliwa yini Ntandokazi if im interested in knowing Phumi

\*\*\*she gasped\*\*\*

Kazi: wait you're interested in her?

\*\*\*she asked with a low tone\*\*\*

Castiel: listen here girly.....you made your choice so whomever I show interest in whether is purely innocent or romantic akulona udoko olugayelwe wena lelo ( its none of your business)..... even if it's your mother okzalayo.... now lose my numbers and enjoy your boring hitman in peace I don't have time for confused little girls im way too old for that shit

\*\*\*then he dropped the call leaving Kazi shocked and hurt by what he said then Menzi walked in\*\*\*

Menzi: sthandwa sam are you sure uPhumi is alright in your house all alone?

Kazi: Phumi this Phumi that....aarg man!

\*\*\*she got up and walked away looking angry leaving Menzi confused and shocked by her\*\*\*

-----

#### AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*the following day Mbali and Ray were having breakfast when Ruslan just walked in house looking like he didn't sleep at all last night\*\*\*

Ruu: familia ( family)

\*\*\*he said and kissed Mbali's cheek and he sat down joining them on the dining table\*\*\*

Mbali: hey Ruu....damn you look like hell

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: what happened to you man

Ruslan: hardly slept Mpilo had nightmares almost the whole night and he was afraid to go back to sleep.... I couldn't even do a spell on him so he'll be able sleep cause he might still have the nightmare but he'll find it hard to wake up

Ray: damn....will he be ok

Ruu: yeah don't worry he'll be fine

Mbali: you know I'll never get used to you having "powers" Ruu

\*\*\*he chuckled as he dished up for himself\*\*\*

Ruu: but you can get used to Saint mmmmh?

Mbali: leave my baby alone please

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed and Ray just shook his head\*\*\*

Ray: why is it that you're growing fond of that pain in the ass demon my flower

Mbali: he protects me baby so he has a special place in my heart

\*\*\*she said and Ruu looked at Ray surprised\*\*\*

Mbali: what?

Ruu: nothing his flower im just shocked by your statement

Mbali: he's part of my son Ruu just like La Parca is part of my husband and if I want to live a peaceful and stress free life I need to accept both of them into our lives....i cant afford to be scared of my son or Ray because they have demons in them... and you know they say black don't crack right well my skin is light so that means I crack easily and I can't have that

\*\*\*both Ray and Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Ray: I can't believe you just said that baby

\*\*\*he said still laughing along with Ruu\*\*\*

Mbali: but its true haw

\*\*\*they continued to laugh.... anyway they had their breakfast conversing and laughing.....well after their breakfast Ray and Ruu went to his study while Mbali cleared the table\*\*\*

## IN THE STUDY ROOM

Ray: so what caused the nightmares man

Ruslan: those fucken Mashaba's are responsible man

Ray: what?

\*\*\*he said looking at Ruu with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Ruu: yeah but don't worry Thandi and the kids are all protected now and as for those fuckers I'll deal with them....they all gonna run around the streets as mad people all of them....starting with their zombies cats dogs and even their rats...all of them!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice then he breathed out trying to calm himself\*\*\*

Ray: so those pieces of shit don't learn huh

\*\*\*he said pissed off\*\*\*

Ruu: don't worry they'll learn the hard way

Ray: damn it....how can they do that to a child man....Mpilo is their own blood for fuck's sake!

Ruu: they don't give a damn about those boys man all they care about is money and power while that shithead called Jerry or Gerald or Jackson wants my Thandi..... I swear that bastard will curse the day he developed feelings for her by time im done with him!

\*\*\* he got up and went to pour some whiskey for both of them and he went back to sit on the couch and gave Ray his drink and he sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: then there's Cass

Ray: what did he do now?

\*\*\*Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: well apparently he met a lady who is Kazi's cousin and he said he can't read her mind like he does with everyone else

Ray: damn.... for real?

\*\*\*he took a sip of his drink and he nodded\*\*\*

Ray: has something like that ever happened to him before

Ruu: he said no

Ray: damn so what does it mean man?

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: well it means two things actually....she's either protected by a spell or something that prevents Cass from reading her mind cause she's our enemy or she's his mate....his chosen one

Ray: wooh.....

Ruu: mmm

\*\*\*he took another sip\*\*\*

Ray: damn....if she's not the mate then she could be with the Brethren

\*\*\*Ruu nodded\*\*\*

Ray: but what about what Juana said

Ruu: that bitch lied about a lot of things man I wouldn't be surprised if she made a mistake.... I mean Kazi and that girl are related so maybe she confused the two or she's not as good as she thinks she is and her powers are weak

\*\*\*Ray laughed\*\*\*

Ray: you know even today I don't understand why those evil blood sucking fuckers call themselves THE BRETHERN... I mean brethren are fellow Christians or members of a male religious group or order right

\*\*\*Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Ruu: well brethren is a fancy plural form of "brother" so yeah you right cause during ancient times men and women used to call each other brethren in their religious groups

Ray: then they should call themselves "brethren of lucifer" instead

\*\*\*Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Ruu: well their original name is "The Brethren of diablo" ( brothers/sisters of the devil)

Ray: Lucifer the devil..... same shit

\*\*\*Ruu laughed again\*\*\*

Ruu: yeah.... "pieces of shit" is what they should call themselves

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Ruu: so you really called Celine over huh

\*\*\*Ray sighed and he gulped down the rest of his drink at one go and Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: yeah...i swear Mbali is gonna send me to my early grave man

\*\*\*Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Ruu: you should've refused

Ray: well Mrs Owoh-Masden threatened to set up the meeting herself if I don't

\*\*\*Ruu laughed again\*\*\*

Ruu: I couldn't believe it when you told me over the phone man

Ray: this girl is gonna give me heart problems im telling you man

\*\*\*Ruu laughed then Ray's phone rang and it was Celine he sighed and answered\*\*\*

Ray: Celine

Celine: im outside

Ray: ok I'll let you in

\*\*\*he dropped the call and Ray brushed his face and he got up\*\*\*

Ray: let's go she's here

\*\*\*Ruu got up and he followed him chuckling\*\*\*

## IN THE LOUNGE

Ray: she's here

\*\*\*he said to Mbali and she got up with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Ruu: are you sure you want to do this his flower

Mbali: yeah....Let her in babe

Ray: im sure she's not even wearing anything since I told her I'll be all alone so....

\*\*\*she clenched her jaws\*\*\*

Mbali: don't worry about that....you won't fuck her so it's no biggy

\*\*\*Ruu looked at Ray with his eyebrows raised and an amused look plastered on his face and Ray huffed and he opened the gate for Celine.... then Mbali went to the dining area and she came back with a chair and she put it on the empty space that was in the lounge and she waited\*\*\*

Ray: and the chair

Mbali: its for our guest baby

\*\*\*Ruu held back his smile....he was impressed by Mbali while Ray was worried about her.... then they heard the doorbell ring and he sighed and went to open.....Mbali and Ruu heard her voice and soon she walked in wearing a long brown coat that showed her cleavage with knee



high boots she was followed by her two bodyguards and Mbali chuckled getting angry....Celine frowned when her eyes landed on Mbali and Ruu\*\*\*

Celine: what the hell is this Raymond...i thought you said you'll be alone?

Mbali: sit!

\*\*\*she looked at Mbali up and down and she chuckled clearly mocking Mbali\*\*\*

Celine: you talking to me little girl

Ray: Celine!

\*\*\*he warned her then her two bodyguards took a step forward with their hands on their waists where their guns are\*\*\*

Mbali: SAINT COME OUT NOW!

\*\*\*Ruu and Ray's eyes popped out and immediately wind like sounds filled the room and the windows immediately got covered with dark smoke and it became dark inside but luckily the lamps were on inside the lounge and dining area\*\*\*

Celine: WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON HERE RAYMOND!

\*\*\*she said looking around and her bodyguards got closer to her trying to protect her\*\*\*

Ray: Mbali!

Ruu: damn!

\*\*\*then another black smoke formed a figure next to Mbali....even though she was a little scared of Saint ( the demon) but she knew he or it won't hurt her in any way...as for Celine and the bodyguard they drew out their guns pointing them at the smoke formed figure with their shaking hands and eyes popped out\*\*\*

Ruu: I wouldn't do that if I were you

\*\*\*he warned them and immediately their guns melted and they quickly dropped them on the floor cursing\*\*\*

Guard1: what the fuck!

\*\*\*he said looking scared while the other one was frozen on the spot\*\*\*

Celine: Ray what the hell is this....wha...what's going on here?

\*\*\*she said with her eyes popped out and her heart pounding hard against her chest\*\*\*

Mbali: my son take this two men trying to protect this evil witch that hurt mommy away and deal with them but don't kill them just make sure they have nightmares that will haunt them for the rest of their miserable lives

Voice: yes mommy

\*\*\*then the guards got lifted up by the black smoke all of a sudden and they screamed as the smoke moved away with them from the lounge going to the basement.... Well in the basement Saint really dealt with them accordingly he/it left them curled up into a ball in the corner with their knees up on their chest and their hands wrapping around them while they rocked themselves back and forth with tears running down their cheeks\*\*\*

IN THE LOUNGE

Ray: my flower

Mbali: Ray please not now.....now what I want from this bitch is to sit the fuck down on that chair before Saint makes her

Celine: Raymond!

\*\*\*she said trying to sound brave as she looked at him but a crack on her voice gave her away and Mbali smirked\*\*\*

Ruu: wow im impressed Mrs Owoh-Masden

\*\*\*he said as he went to sit down on the couch....as for Ray he stood there shocked impressed but most of all worried\*\*\*

Mbali: SAINT!

\*\*\*the smoke figure came back from the basement\*\*\*

Saint: yes mommy

\*\*\*Celine quickly sat down\*\*\*

Mbali: good bitch

\*\*\*Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Celine: what do you want?

\*\*\*she said looking at Mbali with an angry look on her face\*\*\*

Saint: don't look at mommy like that!

\*\*\* Saint said with his creepy and scary voice but Celine because of her stubbornness she kept looking at Mbali with a deadly look then the smoke figure quickly moved coming towards her and she quickly closed her eyes shaking\*\*\*

Saint: I won't tell you again!

\*\*\*Saint warned her and Mbali's face got filled with a lot of a bad-bitch attitude and she smiled\*\*\*

Mbali: thank you baby

\*\*\*then the smoke moved back a bit and Celine opened her eyes but she looked down instead scared to look up\*\*\*

Mbali: now here's the thing....before we get to you trying to ruin my marriage let's start with Ray's "supposed" child

\*\*\*Ray and Ruu's eyes popped out and they looked at each other talking with their eyes then they looked back at Mbali and Celine\*\*\*

Mbali: is there really a baby or you made that up....and another thing Ruu over there is a real wizard so if you lie bitch he'll know and Saint my boy over here will deal with you.....now is there a baby or not

Celine: ye...yes there is

\*\*\*Mbali swallowed\*\*\*

Mbali: and the baby mama?

Celine: she...she was Rosalina my cousin

\*\*\*Ray sighed and he looked down when Mbali looked at him and Mbali swallowed again trying by all means not to shed a tear....she cleared her throat and composed herself\*\*\*

Mbali: you said she was your cousin

Celine: she.... she died of drug overdose

\*\*\*Ruu frowned\*\*\*

Ruu: mmmm Celine....

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Mbali: what is it Ruu?

Ruu: she's lying

Celine: no...no im not

Mbali: Saint!

Saint: yes mommy

\*\*\*he said with his scary voice\*\*\*

Celine: ok ok I killed her....i paid someone to inject her with an overdose of drugs to make it look like suicide cause I was angry that she managed to sleep with Raymond and even got pregnant while I failed

\*\*\*Ray chuckled getting angry cause Rosalina was a sweet girl even if she was still alive he knew she wouldn't come with baby mama drama cause she was scared of him\*\*\*

Mbali: where's the baby

\*\*\*Celine kept quiet\*\*\*

Mbali: im not gonna ask you again bitch

Celine: i...i sold her to some married couple back in Venezuela who can't conceive

Ray: you fucken Bitch!

\*\*\* he rushed to her and a punch landed on her face breaking her nose then he grabbed her by her neck looking deadly that even Mbali got scared by looking at him\*\*\*

Ruu: Ray!

Ray: THEIR LOCATION NOW!

\*\*\*he said squeezing tight and she struggled to breathe busy making shocking sounds with her hands trying to pull Ray hand off her neck\*\*\*

Ray: ANSWER ME DAMN IT!

Mbali: Ray stop!

\*\*\*he didn't at first but when she touched his arm he came back to his senses and he let her go and turned to look at a scared Mbali then he looked back at Celine who was coughing uncontrollably with thick blood coming out of her nose.....Ray still had that scary look on his face\*\*\*

Ray: give me my daughter's location or I'll let Saint deal with you!

\*\*\*Celine continued to cough holding her painful neck\*\*\*

-----

## AT KAZI'S HOUSE

\*\*\* Phumi has been trying to call Kazi who wasn't answering her calls the whole morning and she was getting a bad vibe that maybe she was avoiding her.....she wished she didn't call her last night about Castiel showing up here and all that he said cause she could see that Kazi liked the guy even though she was now dating Menzi.....she sighed and decided to call Menzi\*\*\*

Menzi: yeah

Phumi: ummm hey Menzi its Phumi Kazi's cousin

Menzi: ooh hey is everything ok

Phumi: yeah...actually no I've been trying to call Kazi all morning and she's not answering my calls

\*\*\*Menzi sighed cause Kazi slept without saying anything to him and she also woke up in a bad mood even the morning glory he gave her didn't change her mood and he wondered what happened between them....he wanted to ask her but he thought against it thinking that they will squash whatever fight they had soon \*\*\*

Menzi: ummm I last saw her before I left for work.... she's probably busy or something

Phumi: ooh yeah maybe anyway please tell her to call me back when you talk her

Menzi: ok I will shap

Phumi: shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and then there was a knock on the door and she quickly got up and went to open the door thinking its Kazi and her face fell when she saw that it was Castiel instead.....she tried to close the door but he blocked it with his hand\*\*\*

Castiel: I come in peace....

\*\*\*he said showing her the bouquet of flowers and a box of expensive swizz chocolates\*\*\*

Castiel: im sorry about last night..... what I said didn't come out exactly the way I wanted it to come out

Phumi: ufuna ngiyenzi ngamaflower heh ( what do you want me to do with flowers) do I look like a white woman to you?

\*\*\*Castiel looked at her shocked\*\*\*

Phumi: and what's with those chocolates..... weh Castiel or Castor oil or Custard or Caster Semenya.... whatever your name is....

\*\*\*she said waving her hand around\*\*\*

Phumi: don't you know amaFerrero Roche mmmh ngiyenzi mina ngaleyo brooklax (don't you know Ferrero Roche's mmmh what should I do with those Brooklax "laxatives")

\*\*\*Castiel wanted to say something but for the first time in his 105 years he was out of words say\*\*\*

Phumi: ngicela uhambe tuu Castor oil anginaso isikhathi sakho mina (please leave Castor oil I don't have time for you) Kazi is angry at me cause you showed up here so tsamaya tuu (leave) before she finds you here

\*\*\*then she slammed the door on his face and locked it going to the lounge while clicking her tongue angrily\*\*\*

Phumi: yho go decid(a) go shapa ke moyanyana mo KZN then phrrtlh ke gafela ke motho ebile motho wa teng obitsa ba ko gae baloi ....ai dilo tsa KZN ( yho I decide to come to KZN for some fresh air and out of the blue this guy is all over my face he's even saying everyone at home uses witchcraft.... ai KZN things)

\*\*\*\* she shook her head and tried Kazi again but this time it send her straight to voicemail.....she sighed and sat down thinking that maybe she should just go back home\*\*\*\*

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Mbali: are you sure?

Celine: yeah im sure

\*\*\*she just given them the location to Ray's daughter then Ray called Mateo and told him to search for the couple and the address Celine gave them\*\*\*

Mbali: what's her name....what did her birth mother name her

Celine: Ca... Cataleya

Mbali: mmmh beautiful name don't you think babe

\*\*\*Ray swallowed hard....he was worried but more over scared cause he didn't know how Mbali really felt about him having a child out there\*\*\*

Ray: yeah

Ruslan: beautiful name indeed but I want to know what do they call her now?

Celine: Pa...Paulina

Mbali: Paulina?....the nerve!....imagine Ruu from Cataleya to Paulina mxm bayahlanya ( they are crazy)

\*\*\*she shook her head then she looked at Ray\*\*\*

Mbali: so what should we do with this bitch babe?

\*\*\*she asked Ray\*\*

Ray: I'll take it from here my flower

Mbali: ok but make sure you don't ..... waste her life as yet if you know what I mean

\*\*\*Ray looked at her with a raised eyebrow\*\*\*

Ruslan: waste her life?

Mbali: I meant don't kill her as yet

Ruslan: I know what you meant his flower im just shocked you said those words yourself

Ray: Mbali I don't want you talking about shit like that more over to even think about it ok!

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Mbali: ya'll forget who my father grandfather and brothers are neh

Ray: it doesn't matter the fact is now you're my wife and I don't want you involved in all this shit

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: fine....but wait until you find your baby before you "deal" with her cause this bitch might be lying about her whereabouts

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: I know that now can you got back to being my innocent wife...please

\*\*\*she smiled then out of the blue she punched Celine hard on her face and Ruslan gasped...she threw more punches on Celine until Ray pulled her away from her\*\*\*

Ray: will you stop!

Mbali: let go of me im not done with this bitch.... I need to teach her a lesson to never try and breakup people's marriages!

Ray: calm the fuck down!

\*\*\*she gave Celine a deadly stare then she raised her hands in surrender\*\*\*

Mbali: fine im calm!

Ray: you sure?

Mbali: yeah

\*\*\*he let her go and she fixed herself and she looked at Ruu who had an amused look on his face then she looked at Ray\*\*\*

Mbali: I guess you boys will take it from here

\*\*\*then she walked away\*\*\*

Mbali: Saint is time for you to go back to sleep baby

Saint: yes mommy

\*\*\*then the smoke disappeared right as Mbali was walking up the stairs and light came in as the smoke on the windows vanished and Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruu: damn Mrs La Parca is in the building

\*\*\*he said with a Mexican accent then he laughed as for Ray he shook his head and he took out his phone and made a call\*\*\*

Mat: jefe



Ray: send some boys to my house I have three packages they need to take to the warehouse for safe keeping

Mat: got it

Ray: and Mat

Mat: jefe

Ray: keep tabs on Celine's syndicate crew since we have her I don't want any nasty surprises

Mat: ok and the couples names and address checks out

Ray: good we will talk later

\*\*\*they ended the call\*\*\*

Celine: you... are... all dead...my people will find me and....

\*\*\*Ray punched her so hard that she passed out instantly \*\*\*

Ray: she fucken talks too much

Ruu: before you do anything I need to say this.....you need to talk to your wife about your plans concerning the baby issue meaning involve her in all your decisions man

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: that baby will need to grow up in a loving family Ray and she can get that if Mbali is on board.... ask for her opinion on this matter and make sure you don't assume that she's ready make sure she's ready for real to mother her before you go look for her

Ray: I hear you man

Ruu: good....i need a drink

\*\*\*he walked away\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*The following day Phumi decided to go back home since Kazi was still ignoring her she was hurt that Kazi was acting this way towards her.....her gut told her that it's because of Castiel and she wished she didn't call her to vent about what Castiel did but then she's glad she called her and told her cause now she can see the kind of cousin she has..... she packed her things and called for an uber then she waited right then there was a knock on the door and she went to open and Castiel was standing there\*\*\*

Phumi: God why mara

Castiel: oohh come on stop being dramatic

\*\*\*He still couldn't read her mind\*\*\*

Phumi: what do you want from me huh?

Castiel: to talk

Phumi: I don't wanna talk to you now leave me alone...please

Castiel: ooh well I can be a pain in the ass if I want to so it's in your best interest to allow us to have the talk

Phumi: what is it that you want to talk about then mmmh?

Castiel: aren't you gonna allow me in

Phumi: no

\*\*\*He sighed.....if only he could know what she's thinking then he was sure by now he would have found out what he wanted to know about her\*\*\*

Castiel: why are you this stubborn?

Phumi: well I don't know you and I definitely don't trust you

Castiel: you know what its fine we can talk here

Phumi: make it quick im about to leave

\*\*\*He frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: leave to where?

Phumi: im going back home

Castiel: why

Phumi: its all your fault

Castiel: ooh please don't tell me you're leaving because I keep coming here

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: im leaving because whatever you said to Kazi made her to stop taking my calls

\*\*\*She said with a sad voice and Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: ooh really...she did that?

Phumi: wa tjena?...mx entlek tsamaya motho tuu (you're grinning...mxm you know what just leave please)

\*\*\*She said as she attempted to close the door but he blocked it with his hand\*\*\*

Castiel: can you stop all this so we can talk

Phumi: I said I don't wanna talk to you why are you forcing things huh?

\*\*\*Castiel sighed frustrated cause he has never been frustrated by a woman like this before... then they saw a car parking behind Castiel's and Kazi got out and Phumi chuckled not believing this was happening\*\*\*

Phumi: Yah neh bati e kana bathong ( so much bad luck)

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled shaking his head and he turned back and looked at a flushed Phumi and he wished so bad to read her thoughts \*\*\*

Castiel: relax will you

Phumi: don't talk to me wena nx

Kazi: what's going on here?

\*\*\*She said with a serious look on her face as she got closer to them\*\*\*

Phumi: he...he came to see you

Castiel: no... that's not why im here

\*\*\*Phumi gave him a death look and he raised his eyebrow at her\*\*\*

Castiel: what you want me to lie?

Kazi: Phumi what's all this....i called you to come here so we can spend some time together not for you to go after my man

Castiel: whoah stop right there.... im not your man Charlotte I never was one and will never be one

\*\*\*Kazi swallowed hard feeling embarrassed she wished she didn't say that\*\*\*

Kazi: I didn't mean you're my man I just meant...

Castiel: I don't care what you meant but you must never go around telling people that im your man or was one....you made your choice now stick to it

\*\*\*her eyes got filled with tears\*\*\*

Kazi: I didn't make my choice ok I just reacted badly and now I wish I didn't do what I did

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled when he read her thoughts.....she kept on thinking "I want you not him"\*\*\*

Castiel: well I don't care

\*\*\*He then looked at Phumi\*\*\*

Castiel: I'll wait for you outside the yard

\*\*\*then he walked away and Kazi looked at Phumi with an angry look on her face\*\*\*

Kazi: I can't believe you Phumi!

Phumi: askies

Kazi: you know I like the guy and now you're going after him....like really now?

Phumi: o sa batla gonnyela Kazi ok ( don't piss me off).....that bastard is making me feel uncomfortable and he insulted me for fucks sake....a re ko gae raloya( he said at home we do witchcraft) and wena you have the fucken guts to stand there and say I want him...wa gafa! (are you crazy)

She said feeling insulted by her.

Kazi: don't give me that attitude ok....he said he's here for you!

She said sounding angry.

Phumi: so what huh...does that mean I want him?..... nx you know what... Fuck you nxa

\*\*\*she went inside to take her bags and Kazi followed her\*\*\*

Kazi: uthi fuck me Phumelele?

Phumi: yeah fuck you for thinking that im interested in that....

\*\*\*She said pointing towards the door\*\*\*

Phumi: and fuck you for letting a dick come between us a dick im not even interested in nxa

\*\*\*Kazi didn't say anything she just blinked fast\*\*\*

Phumi: and just because you can swing between two dicks doesn't mean all of us do that....im happy with my man and you know that a dick im not even interested in nxa

\*\*\*Kazi didn't say anything she just blinked fast\*\*\*

Phumi: and just because you can swing between two dicks doesn't mean all of us do that....im happy with my man and you know that you also know that I've never cheated on him even when I suspected that he was cheating on me... Gosh i can't believe you Kazi....

\*\*\*she then walked to the door \*\*\*

Kazi: Phumz look im...im sorry

Phumi: hai fokof nxa

\*\*\*she walked out leaving Kazi with her mouth hanging..... she walked to the gate and when Castiel saw her he got out of the car\*\*\*

Castiel: damn you look like you're about to explode

Phumi: VOETSEK CASTIEL!

\*\*\*She said and walked out and she joined the road pulling her travelling bag\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Phumi was now standing on a queue to buy a bus ticket then Castiel stood next to her with his hands in his pockets\*\*\*

Phumi: God why me mara?

Castiel: why are you like this huh?

\*\*\*she ignored him.....she just moved with the queue\*\*\*

Castiel: you know the last time I chased after a woman like this was many decades ago

\*\*\*she still ignored him\*\*\*

Castiel: ok then

\*\*\*he moved with her as the queue moved still trying to read her mind and still nothing.....he could read the mind of the woman behind them and she was busy complimenting Castiel's butt she wondered how he looked naked.....and the guy in front of them was praying in his head that the job interview he was going to in Pretoria goes well....He kept on praying to God busy telling him how much he needs the job so he'll be able to take care of his ailing mother and little sister\*\*\*

Castiel: hey man

\*\*\*the guy turned and looked at him\*\*\*

Guy: yebo

Castiel: ummm have we met before?

Guy: ummm cha angicabangi kanjalo mfowethu (no i don't think so bro)

Castiel: ooh alright...quick question.... are you looking for a job and im not talking about anything illegal

\*\*\*The guy looked at Cass surprised\*\*\*

Guy: ummm i...

Castiel: are you?

\*\*\*they moved with the queue\*\*\*

Guy: ummm ye...yes

\*\*\*he said still surprised\*\*\*

Castiel: good

\*\*\*he took out his business card and gave it to him\*\*\*

Castiel: call me sometime tomorrow and we will talk

\*\*\*he took the business card and read on it\*\*\*

Guy: ok I will...thank you sir

Castiel: cool and ooh do you have a spare CV with you

Guy: ye..yes

\*\*\*He quickly took out the CV and gave it to Cass and he read his name\*\*\*

Cass: Ronald Mbuyiseni Dladla.....RMD

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: ok I'll wait for your call RMD

Ronny: ok sir

\*\*\*he said smiling tearfully and he looked forward and moved with the queue and Phumi looked at Castiel briefly then she sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: still won't talk to me?

\*\*\*she continued to ignore him then he heard Ronny thoughts and he was thinking about the money he would lose going to Pretoria for a job interview which might go sideways....if only he could walk from KZN to PTA then he would use the ticket money to buy food for his mother and little sister\*\*\*

Castiel: Ronny

\*\*\*he turned\*\*\*

Ronny: sir

Castiel: go back home and call me tomorrow for the job....

\*\*\*then he took out a couple of hundreds inside his wallet and gave it to him\*\*\*

Castiel: buy airtime with that

\*\*\*Ronny swallowed hard and he slowly took the money with his shaking hand.....his pride wanted him to refuse it but thinking about his mother he knew he needed it and as for the job interview he knew he might not even get the job cause he didn't even have the number of years of experience they wanted he thought that the fact that they called him for the interview was because God was finally gonna answer his prayers but deep down he knew his chances of getting the job were slim.....his other reason of going to Pretoria is to drop off his CVs at other companies there after his interview\*\*\*

Ronny: tha...thank you sir

\*\*\*he said with a breaking voice\*\*\*

Castiel: and if I don't answer your call leave a message and I'll get back to you ok

\*\*\*Ronny nodded \*\*\*

Ronny: ye....yes sir Thank you

Castiel: yeah...now go home kid

Ronny: thank you sir....thank you



\*\*\* He said trying to fight back his tears and he walked away wiping his tears that fell he was gonna go straight to the supermarket to buy decent food for his mother and little sister\*\*\*

Phumi: that...that was very kind of you

Castiel: ooh now you decide to talk to me huh?

Phumi: mmmmh cause I can see that you have a heart after all

Castiel: what's that supposed to mean?

Phumi: dude you were rude to Kazi

Castiel: I wasn't... I was just being honest

Phumi: well you were rude

Castiel: believe me you'll hate me when im rude.....so earlier I was just being honest

\*\*\*She looked at him briefly then it was her turn to buy her ticket and she bought it then Castiel also bought his and they moved to the bus and they got in and Phumi sat down then Castiel sat next to her\*\*\*

Phumi: really now...there are many empty seats dude

Castiel: I prefer to sit next to you

Phumi: hai cha angikukholwa lokhu ( no I can believe this)

Castiel: what is it you cant believe

\*\*\*she gave him the wtf look and he chuckled then he sat back\*\*\*

Phumi: ok let's get it all out....what do you want from me like for real this time

Castiel: well for starters I asked you a question and you didn't answer me

Phumi: no the aren't witches at home...happy?

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: you sure

Phumi: ungazongihlanyisa wena ( don't piss me off)... I just answered you entlek ufunani kimi ( what do you want from me)

\*\*\*she said with a pissed off tone\*\*\*

Castiel: chill jeez

Phumi: nx

\*\*\*then she exhaled\*\*\*

Phumi: now will you leave me alone since I answered your stupid question?

Castiel: no I have another thing to ask you

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Phumi: khuluma! (talk)

Castiel: are you ready to travel many miles with different types of people who'll make this journey a painful one for you

\*\*\*she frowned at him\*\*\*

Phumi: what are you talking about?

Castiel: you see that guy at the back...well he ate lots and lots of cooked beans and I don't know if you know how stinky a fart of a person who ate beans or eggs is

\*\*\*she looked at the back and the guy was busy burping then she looked at Castiel with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Phumi: and how do you know that

Castiel: I just know unless you want to find out when this bus is on the road

\*\*\*She faced forward then an obese man walked inside the bus and Castiel looked at Phumi and when he sat on the seat that was in front of theirs he chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: can we just go

Phumi: go if you want to haw

\*\*\*He sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: please....Please man im suffocating in here

Phumi: then hamba (go)

Castiel: im not leaving without you

Phumi: mxm

Castiel: if I faint and die in here then it's all on you

\*\*\*she gave him the wtf look\*\*\*

Castiel: im serious.... I don't do crowded and cramped up spaces ever

Phumi: yaz uyadina Castiel....wa tena mxm (you know you're tiring Castiel)

\*\*\*she got up and looked at him\*\*\*

Phumi: a reye o nnetseng ( lets go why are you sitting there)

\*\*\*he raised his eyebrows at her\*\*\*

Castiel: ummm I only understood "a" and "o"

Phumi: Amen!

\*\*\*the guy on the front chuckled\*\*\*

Phumi: let's go before I change my mind tuu

\*\*\*Castiel got up and he took her bag and looked at the guy\*\*\*

Castiel: uyahleka ngamehlo akho amakhulu kungathi uyixoxo nx ( you're laughing with your big eyes as if you're a frog)...your cholesterol will choke you while you busy laughing at things that got nothing to do with you unye msoon

\*\*\*Phumi looked at him shocked and the guy frowned looking at him.....Castiel walked out of the bus and Phumi followed him with a "wow" look on her face\*\*\*

Phumi: that was unnecessary dude

Castiel: can you stop calling me dude...im not your dude Phumi

Phumi: o sambora tuu ( don't bore me please)

Castiel: just stop talking that Tswana shit with me ok...speak Isizulu then if English is showing you flames

\*\*\*she showed him the hand and walked away\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*They were now on the road to the airport then Castiel took his phone and called Ray\*\*\*

Ray: Cass

Castiel: bros you good

Ray: yeah what's up?

Castiel: I need a favour man

Ray: im listening

Castiel: I need you to buy me two plane tickets business class.....try and get me the earliest flight you can get

Ray: two plane tickets huh?

Castiel: I'll explain when I see you later

Ray: ok

Castiel: thanks bro

Ray: yeah yeah

\*\*\*then they ended the call\*\*\*

Phumi: I hope the second plane ticket is not for me

Castiel: why don't tell me you're scared of flights

\*\*\*she kept quiet and looked outside the window\*\*\*

Castiel: wow so you can run your mouth like someone who has diarrhea but you're scared of taking a mere flight

\*\*\*She showed him the middle finger \*\*\*

Castiel: be careful that finger might stay like that for the rest of your life

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone that made her have chills run down her spine and she swallowed\*\*\*

Castiel: so tell me about yourself

\*\*\*She kept quiet still looking out the window\*\*\*

Castiel: Phumi

Phumi: I have nothing to say

Castiel: you're exhausting you know that

Phumi: more reason why you should stay the hell away from me

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: what is it about me that piss you off?

Phumi: you insulted me and on top of that you came between me and my cousin

Castiel: I didn't insult you Phumi....where I come from being a witch is what is called "dope" today so I didn't think you'd feel insulted by my question

Phumi: dude you speak Isizulu so you should know that that question is sensitive and insulting in South Africa

Castiel: I know that South Africans are very sensitive humans and that they get offended easily but come on that was a simple question that needed a simple answer

Phumi: mxm you know how sensitive we are and yet o no phatlhoga fela nje ( and yet you just talk as you please)

Castiel: what did I say about speaking Tswana with me?

Phumi: what did I say about you staying the hell away from me but yet here we are

\*\*\*Castiel looked at her and chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: and to think that we thought you might be with the Brethren....you're just a loud mouth nje

\*\*\*he chuckled and Phumi frowned\*\*\*

Phumi: who are the Brithen?

Castiel: its Brethren not Brithen ....and they are some evil beings

Phumi: whatever...but wait....what if I am with them mmmmh?

\*\*\*he looked at her briefly\*\*\*

Castiel: then I would be dead by now

Phumi: well what if the Brithen don't want you dead as yet

\*\*\*She said with a raised eyebrow and he chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: for starters you said their name wrong so you can't be with them

Phumi: mxm whatever

Castiel: “ damn it she has to be the one....Juana made a mistake she has to be the one”

\*\*\*he thought and they continued to drive\*\*\*

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Ray bought the tickets for Castiel and send him the codes then his boys came and took Celine and his traumatized bodyguard to the warehouse.....Right now Ruu and Ray are sitting in the lounge with Ruslan helping Ray out with some papers concerning the private hospital Ray was building\*\*\*

Ruslan: SAINT CATALEYA PRIVATE HOSPITAL....I like it man

Ray: yeah but I need to run it past Mbali first

Ruslan: and he's learning people...

\*\*\*he said smiling and Ray pushed him\*\*\*

Ray: mxm piss off puta

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: so what are you gonna do with Celine

Ray: I'll call her uncle and make a deal with him I know he always wanted to take over the family business but his brother gave the reins to his useless daughter instead so I kill the bitch for him and he's indebted to me for life or I'll threaten to let Celine go and he never gets his hands on the business and we both know which one he'll go with

Ruslan: ooh so you got all this figured out right

Ray: you know me Celine being kill here won't have him as a suspect.... and plus wifey started the whole shit and im finishing it

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: lucky son of a bitch

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: but im worried about her man

Ruslan: don't be...she just showed you that she can hold it down

Ray: I don't want her involved man

Ruslan: then make sure she doesn't get involved it's as simple as that

Ray: yeah

\*\*\*Ray nodded then they heard the doorbell ring and Ruu got up\*\*\*

Ray: just so you know you're going to run Saint Cataleya as the CEO so you'll be able to get a work permit to be closer to Thandi and your kids all the time

Ruslan: what?

Ray: it's not up for discussion Ruu....we both know you have a business mind so find a way to make the Hospital a success.....and its 15% shares for sale to you 10% for Mat 10% for Diego 10% for Heath 10% for Jabu and 45% for me and plus you'll monitor your many investment online so it's a win win situation

\*\*\*he stopped walking and looked at Ray\*\*\*

Ruu: you have all this shit figured out huh?

Ray: im a business man it's just a pity I can't run the hospital because of other businesses I have on the side

\*\*\*Ruu opened the door and he signed for the package then he tipped the delivery man and he closed the door and walked back to Ray\*\*\*

Ray: you had that delivered here what about Thandi's house?

Ruslan: I know the madam of this house won't mind and she won't ask unnecessary questions

Ray: what about me

Ruslan: you're irrelevant

Ray: what?....you know what nigga fuck you

\*\*\*Ruu laughed then he put the box on the table and opened it and there was a scarf inside written aunt with a white making pen a warn-out head warp written gogo two t-shirts inside and one was written big bro and the other one was written another bro....He smirked wickedly and Ray went to see what's inside and he frowned\*\*\*

Ray: I hope all this is not for Thandi man



Ruslan: come on man I would never insult amor like that....this is what I need to deal with the Mashabas once and for all

Ray: no wait... you gonna...

Ruslan: yeah....im gonna make their nightmares come to life in a most horrific way

Ray: damn and how the hell did you get all this!

\*\*\*he closed the box and whistled going to the kitchen\*\*\*

Ray: Ruu!

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

Cass: wow you're really scared of flying huh

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: yeah

Cass: relax nothing will happen

Phumi: and how do you know that... are you God?

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: I just know now relax

Phumi: mxm easy for you to say....this shitty thing might explode and we will all die

\*\*\*He chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: and that bus can also explode too you know

\*\*\*She rolled her eyes and she breathed out then they kept quiet for sometime\*\*\*

Cass: so is there someone special in your life?

\*\*\*she looked at him \*\*\*

Phumi: yeah and we are in love

Cass: is that so

Phumi: yeah we've been together for 10 years and still going strong

\*\*\* she said and she looked at him with pouted lips and Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: cute pout

\*\*\*she stopped pouting and she frowned then he chuckled again\*\*\*

Cass: so 10 years huh and he still hasn't put a ring on it

Phumi: ufunukthini Castor oil ( what are you trying to say Castor oil)

Cass: what did you just call me?

Phumi: ummm I said Castiel

\*\*\*He looked at her with an intense look on his face then he sipped on his drink\*\*\*

Cass: that's strike 1 from you just so you know

\*\*\*she frowned at him\*\*\*

Phumi: askies

Cass: you heard me

Phumi: mxm

Cass: you know the day im gonna fuck that stinking attitude and stubbornness out of you you'll think the world is coming to an end ngiyaktshela ( im telling you)

\*\*\*her mouth hung open as she looked at him\*\*\*

Cass: continue talking to me anyhow and your day will come

Phumi: im not scared of you and I will never ever sleep with you..... I mean you're not even my type for God's sake....you might be Kazi's but definitely not mine

\*\*\*He chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: if you say so

\*\*\*he picked a business magazine and paged through it\*\*\*

Phumi: so what time are we landing?

Cass: soon

Phumi: I asked “what time” Castiel

Cass: I don't know

Phumi: Jehovah!

\*\*\*he looked at her briefly\*\*\*

Cass: el día que te follaré (the day I'll fuck you)

\*\*\*then he chuckled shaking his head\*\*

Phumi: askies?

Cass: nothing

\*\*\*then he chuckled and continued to page through the magazine.....after some time they landed and they went to take her luggage and he made a call to Ray and Ray told him one of his guys will hand him a car key outside he grabbed Phumi's hand and she frowned at how cold his hand was...anyway they walked to the exit and as soon as they got out a guy walked to them and greeted them then he gave Castiel a car key and pointed at the car then he walked away\*\*\*

Cass: let's go

\*\*\*he pulled her towards the car and opened the passenger door for her and she got in and he closed it and he went to open the boot of the car and put in her bag and closed it then he went to the driver side got in and drove away after they both buckled up\*\*\*

Phumi: so are you some kind of a rich man with cold hands?

Cass: why do you ask?

\*\*\*he ignored the cold hands part\*\*\*

Phumi: business class tickets and now some guy just handed you a car key just like that

Cass: well I do have businesses both legal and illegal but I have people who run them for me

Phumi: illegal?

\*\*\*she said frowning\*\*\*

Cass: yeah it's the in thing.... you don't know that?

\*\*\*she gave him the "wtf" look\*\*\*

Phumi: you kidding right

Cass: no

\*\*\*she just kept quiet\*\*\*

Cass: there's a lot of shit happening in my life in fact there's a lot of shit that will shock you about me so this revelation shouldn't shock you

Phumi: well thankfully I'll never see you again after dropping me off so it's all good

\*\*\*he chuckled \*\*\*

Cass: what makes you think this is the last time we will be seeing each other

Phumi: we're not friends Castiel

Cass: yeah but I think you are my mate

Phumi: mate?

Cass: mmmmh

Phumi: well im not your mate whatever that means.....im Thabo's woman

Cass: no you're Thabo's ex

Phumi: wa gafa ka bona mxm ( you're crazy)

Cass: and there she goes with her Tswana bullshit nx

Phumi: don't start with me tuu

\*\*\*Castiel just shook his head and they continued to drive in complete silence until Phumi fell asleep\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Phumi woke up when she felt pressed and she yawned and squirted her eyes looking around then her eyes landed on Castiel who was sitting on a chair not far from the bed and she froze\*\*\*

Cass: you're finally awake...damn you sleep like a dead person yeer minus the snoring ofcourse

Phumi: where...where am i?

Cass: my brother's house

Phumi: what...i...

\*\*\*she quickly touched her nana to feel any pain and Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: believe me you would have known the moment you opened your eyes ukuthi my dick was in there so relax

\*\*\*She swallowed hard and got out of the bed\*\*\*

Phumi: ummm where is the bathroom

\*\*\*he pointed at a slightly opened door and she went there and did her business after she was done she flushed and thoroughly checked herself and her nana and she was all good then she washed her hands and went back to the bedroom\*\*\*

Cass: you hungry?

Phumi: why didn't you wake me up so I give you directions?

Cass: nje....so are you hungry?

Phumi: Castiel I asked you a question!

\*\*\* she said with a raised voice and he frowned at her\*\*\*

Cass: hey...hey don't fucken raise your voice at me ok!

\*\*\*he warned her and she kept quiet cause his warning tone was scary\*\*\*

Phumi: mxm

\*\*\*she saw her hand bag and went to take out her phone and she checked the time and it was 23H15....she sighed then she turned and looked at an unbothered Castiel\*\*\*

Phumi: I need to leave

Cass: at this time?

Phumi: you have a car Castiel so you can just drive me home

Cass: no

\*\*\*he said getting up and he walked to her and she frowned\*\*\*

Phumi: what do you mean no....dude assomblief don't make me mad

Cass: what did I say about you calling me dude

Phumi: Castiel o sa batla go mbora please (Castiel don't bore me please)....just take me home

Cass: and I said no its late I'll take you home tomorrow

\*\*\*she looked at him with an angry look on her face\*\*\*

Phumi: you know what its fine I'll make a plan

Cass: ok...in the meantime let me bring our food

\*\*\*He walked out and she stood there not knowing what to do...She sat down at the edge of the bed for some time thinking of who to call she couldn't call her boyfriend cause nigga didn't know she was even coming back so to call him to come and pick her up from some guy's house will just mess things up between them worst thing is she didn't even know where she was....Her phone rang and she contemplated on whether to answer it or to just let it ring but she knew how crazy her boyfriend is if she doesn't answer his calls so she answered it\*\*\*

Phumi: babe

Thabo: love o sharp ( love you good)

Phumi: yah wena? (yeah you)

Thabo: nna ke grand (im good) so how's KZN treating you

\*\*\*she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Thabo: keng?(what)

Phumi: umm im coming back to....tomorrow

\*\*\*right then Castiel walked in with two plates filled with food\*\*\*

Thabo: why did something happen

\*\*\*he asked worried\*\*\*

Phumi: yeah ummm well Kazi is just too busy for me so ke bone gore ke no bowa once since im bored ( so I thought I should just come back since im bored)

Thabo: ooh ok so you'll tell me gore o fitlha bo nako mang so ke tlo go pick(a) up neh ( what time you'll be arriving so I'll come pick you up ok)

Phumi: ok babe....i love you

\*\*\*Castiel clenched his jaws and he put the plates down and snatched Phumi's phone and dropped the call then he switched it off and threw the phone on top of the bed leaving Phumi shocked\*\*\*

Phumi: what the fuck Castiel!

Cass: your food

\*\*\*he said pointing at the plates\*\*\*

Phumi: why did you do that....that's my boyfriend you jerk!

Castiel: I don't like his voice...its fucken annoying

\*\*\*he took his plate and went to sit down and started eating leaving Phumi pissed off\*\*\*

-----

AT THE HOUSE RUU RENTED FOR THANDI

Mpilo: so the monster won't come again dad

Ruu: no I chased it away last night and it will never bother you again ok

Mpilo: ok

\*\*\*he said smiling\*\*\*

Ruu: good now it's time for you to sleep my pilot

\*\*\*Ruu pulled the covers to his neck and kissed his forehead\*\*\*

Ruu: good night my pilot

Mpilo: good night dad

\*\*\*Mpilo yawned and closed his eyes then Ruslan went to Mpendulo's bed and sat on the edge\*\*\*

Ruu: so what happened today at school champ?

\*\*\*Mpe sighed and he swallowed hard sitting up\*\*\*

Mpe: he...he called me a disgusting faggot and I punched him

\*\*\*he said looking down and Ruslan frowned getting angry\*\*\*

Ruu: he did what?.....wait why did he call you that

\*\*\*Mpe looked away\*\*\*



Ruu: im waiting champ

Mpe: cause.... cause I said Lunga Tshabalala is cute with nice pink lips

\*\*\*Ruslan frowned\*\*\*

Ruu: who the hell is that?

Mpe: he's a Tv presenter

\*\*\*Ruu sighed and he brushed his beard with his right hand\*\*\*

Ruu: champ tell me here do you think you're gay

Mpe: no....ofcourse not...im not gay...how can you ask me that

Ruu: ok now tell me here.....do you find other boys cute and handsome other than that Tv presenter

\*\*\*he kept quiet looking down while playing with his fingers\*\*\*

Ruu: champ?

Mpe: no...no I don't

Ruu: don't lie to me Mpe

\*\*\*tears ran down his face and Ruslan sighed then he pulled the covers off him and he got up\*\*\*

Ruu: let's go talk somewhere private

\*\*\*Mpe hesitated a bit then he got off the bed and followed Ruslan out.....they went to his study room and he instructed that he sit down and Mpe sat down and Ruslan sat next to him\*\*\*

Ruu: im gonna ask you again champ....do you find other boys attractive....do other boys look cute and handsome to you

\*\*\*Mpe swallowed hard and tears continued to stream down his cheeks\*\*\*

Ruu: im waiting

Mpe: ye...yes

\*\*\*then he busted out with a cry and Ruslan sighed and pulled him closer and he sobbed on his chest\*\*\*

Ruu: its ok Champ...its ok I understand

\*\*\*He waited for him to calm down then he wiped his tears and sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: when did you notice that you liked boys instead of girls?

Mpe: two years ago....we...we were playing mantlwane ( a game of make-believe) at gogo and mkhulu's place and... and I was playing the child while some boy was playing my father and some girl was playing my mother....a time came and "mother" told "dad" to bath me and when he started touching me pretending to bath me I felt some way I felt a tingling feeling on my privates and I had a chilling feeling all over my body my little guy was also hard

\*\*\*he kept quiet while looking down feeling embarrassed\*\*\*

Ruu: go on

Mpe: we went to "sleep" then "in the morning" the boy kissed the girl like you do with mom when you leave and I got angry.....i was angry that he kissed her that I even told them im not playing mantlwane anymore and I walked away

\*\*\*he sighed still embarrassed\*\*\*

Mpe: I didn't understand why I was feeling that way but I hated that girl ever since.....then one day we...we were changing for a soccer practice at school and I saw a boy in his undies and that feeling came back again...I've been feeling like that ever since for other boys

\*\*\*he said with a low tone embarrassed with tears streaming down his face and Ruu sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: there's nothing wrong with you Mpe just because you like other boys and not girls doesn't mean there's something wrong with you ok

\*\*\*he nodded sniffing\*\*\*

Ruu: well my son who's your elder brother is gay and I don't love him any less in fact he's the best son a father could ask for

Mpe: he's....gay?

\*\*\*he asked shocked and Ruu nodded\*\*\*

Ruu: well his mother and her family are church people and they think he's possessed by a demon that's why he's like that

Mpe: oooh

\*\*\*he said looking down\*\*\*

Ruu: but I taught him to ignore such people in his life cause people will always find something wrong to say about you.....even when you're not gay they'll say you're weak and lazy cause you don't have a job.....when you're not ready to have a child they'll say you can't have kids.....when you're working they'll say since you started working you think you're better than them and so on and so forth so just be you champ....be Mpe ok

\*\*\*Mpe nodded\*\*\*

Ruu: even if they say you're going to hell for being gay just tell them you'll meet them there cause judging another person is ungodly.....people will talk no matter what my boy and they also judge you no matter how good you are so just ignore them

\*\*\*Mpe sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: remember avoid a fool in order to avoid noise and that only God can judge you Mpe and never let people bring you down gays have a sharp tongue for such delinquent people so don't disappoint

\*\*\*Mpe laughed shyly and Ruslan smiled\*\*\*

Mpe: thanks pops im glad mom chose you to be our dad

\*\*\*he said sincerely with tears in his eyes\*\*\*

Ruu: well it's the other way around actually...i chose her but don't tell her I told you that

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Ruu: you're my son Mpe and I'll always be here for you no matter what you hear me

\*\*\*he nodded and Ruu looked at him smirking\*\*\*

Ruu: so you punched that boy huh

Mpe: well im sorry I broke his nose but he deserved it pops

\*\*\*they both laughed and Mpe wiped his tears feeling better that someone knows about the strange feelings he has for other boys\*\*\*

Ruu: well your mother is fuming and we both know tomorrow she's gonna swear at you and even whip your butt

\*\*\*Mpendulo sighed\*\*\*

Mpe: this baby is gonna be death of us pops no man

\*\*\*he said shaking his head and Ruu laughed.... well they told the boys about Thandi being pregnant\*\*\*

Ruu: leave my princess alone

\*\*\*then he got up and Mpe also got up\*\*\*

Ruu: ooh before I forget you're grounded for the whole of this week since you're expelled... so no TV and PlayStation for you and im taking your phone too

Mpe: but pops....

\*\*\*he looked at him with a raise eyebrow and Mpe kept quiet\*\*\*

Mpe: yes sir

\*\*\*he said looking down\*\*\*

Ruu: good and all you'll do is study until you go back to school...and don't think I won't know if you're not in fact we both know I'll know so don't dare me boy..... now go to bed

\*\*\*he walked away sulking\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you

Mpe: yeah right

Ruu: what was that?

\*\*\*he asked with a threatening tone\*\*\*

Mpe: no...nothing.....I love you too

Ruu: thought as much

\*\*\*Mpe walked out sulking and Ruu chuckled shaking his head then he sighed and walked out and he went to their bedroom\*\*\*

Ruu: hey why are you still awake?

Thandi: I can't sleep im worried about Mpe....like how can he punch another child like that

\*\*\* she sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: he was wrong to get violent like that with that boy but I must say im proud of him

Thandi: Ruu!

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled and he got inside the covers\*\*\*

Ruu: what!

Thandi: I won't raise a violent child nna ..... never!

Ruslan: champ is not violent amor we both know that im sure whatever that boy said to him is what ticked him off

Thandi: but still he shouldn't have hit him baby look now he got expelled

\*\*\*she said with an emotional voice\*\*\*

Ruu: for a week only amor and I grounded him for this week so he knows what he did is wrong and he'll never do it again

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: so did he tell you what that other boy said to make him lose it like that

\*\*\*she said resting her head on his chest and he wrapped his arms around her and kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Ruu: no.... all he said is he's sorry he broke his nose but he deserves it

Thandi: he said that?

\*\*\*she said trying to get off him but he tightened the grip around her\*\*\*

Ruu: where you going.....just relax and stop stressing my princess please

\*\*\*she sulked and relaxed a bit\*\*\*

Ruu: I handled things now relax amor....i got this ok

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: I know...im just worried about him Ruu

Ruu: and I understand amor but im here and im not going anywhere so let me play my fatherly role and handle this please

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: ok

\*\*\*she kissed his chest and he kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Ruu: can I get your opinion on something

Thandi: yeah

Ruu: how would you feel about Mpilo or Mpe being gay

\*\*\*she kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Thandi: I'd be disappointed but I won't love either one of them any less

Ruu: ok

\*\*\*they kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Thandi: let me guess you think Mpe is gay

\*\*\*Ruu kept quiet a bit then he sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: yeah

Thandi: so he did tell you why he punched that boy right

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: yeah the other boy called him a disgusting faggot

Thandi: wooh what!

\*\*\*she said getting up\*\*\*

Thandi: he called him what?

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Ruu: relax will you

Thandi: some piece of shit that got conceived by mistake just because the condom broke and a morning after pill didn't work called my son a disgusting faggot!

\*\*\*Ruu held his laugh\*\*\*

Ruu: calm down please.....champ punched him and even broke his nose so calm down

Thandi: nx o mo laile....e ko sa le a mo raga a be a thuba le maenyana a gae a dinonyane nx.....a re my son is a disgusting faggot.... wa nnyela nx.... entlek msoon wa mmae ( nx he did good....he should've kicked and crushed his small balls nx....he said my son is a disgusting faggot .... he's full of shit nx....you know what his mother's cunt)

Ruu: amor please calm down....please

\*\*\* he pleaded and she breathed out then she laid back on Ruu's chest\*\*\*

Thandi: mxm Im no longer angry with Mpe you should continue to punish him but im no longer disappointed with him that little fucker deserved it nx

\*\*\*Ruu sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: so what about him possibly being gay

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: I have been suspecting that he might be by the things that he likes doing that are odd....the way he acts and behaves sometimes have been giving me bad vibes you know....i was just hoping that its all in my head but I guess I was just in denial

\*\*\*she sighed sadly\*\*\*

Thandi: you know what..... lets talk about it tomorrow cause right now im just too pissed by that little mistake of a sperm that insulted my son to even think clearly

\*\*\*he chuckled a bit\*\*\*

Ruu: alright....i love you ok

Thandi: I love you too and thank you for going to talk to him instead of me cause I know I would've whipped his ass instead of trying to understand why he did what he did

Ruu: I told you I got you amor

Thandi: im one lucky girl neh

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruu: and im one lucky man

\*\*\* he pulled her face up and they kissed\*\*\*

-----

AT LIMPOPO

\*\*\*kokwane was fast asleep when she heard someone or something whispering to her at first she thought she was dreaming but even when she opened her eyes in the dark room she still heard the whisper not far from her\*\*\*

Voice: why?

\*\*\*the voice said whispering\*\*\*

Kokwane: ko yendlekala yini (whats going on)

\*\*\*she asked herself then she got out of bed and she went to switch on the light with the voice still asking "why".....as soon as the light went on she screamed when she saw James standing there looking scary with blood coming out of his mouth nose and eyes....his clothes were ripped and covered in blood\*\*\*

Kokwane: yho yho yho ngwino!



\*\*\*she screamed with her hands on top of her head....she was even shaking\*\*\*

James: why?

\*\*\*he whispered again walking slowly towards her \*\*\*

Kokwane: yho Jamese....Jamese nikhomele....nikhomele xetokolo xa mena! ( James...James forgive me...forgive me my grandchild)

\*\*\*she said shaking with her eyes popped out\*\*\*

James: why?

\*\*\*he continued whispering as he walked to her.....she screamed again but then she stopped and she held her chest with her eyes popped out and she fell on the floor still clinging to her chest until she stopped moving and she breathed out once then she lay there with her eyes and mouth opened without blinking then “James” disappeared....her granddaughter then rushed inside her bedroom to check why her granny was screaming and she found her on the floor not moving\*\*\*

GrandD: kokwane...kokwane!

\*\*\*she wasn't moving and she wasn't blinking.....she screamed for help while shaking her granny but kokwane was gone\*\*\*

Phumi: what about our sleeping arrangements

Cass: what about them

Phumi: where will you sleep

\*\*\*Castiel started taking off his clothes\*\*\*

Phumi: what are you doing?

Castiel: im going to take a shower

\*\*\*He said also taking off his underwear and his semi hard dick dangled freely and Phumi gasped and she looked away\*\*\*

Castiel: you can look I don't mind

Phumi: piss off Castiel

\*\*\*He laughed and went to the bathroom and he took a shower.....after he was done he went back to bedroom naked and found Phumi lying on the bed\*\*\*

Phumi: do you have to walk around naked

Castiel: yeah....im trying to seduce you can't you see

Phumi: Amen!

\*\*\*he chuckled and started putting on lotion\*\*\*

Castiel: you can shower now since im done

\*\*\*she got out of bed and went to take her toiletry bag and pyjamas making sure she doesn't look at Castiel's naked body she went to the bathroom and closed then locked the door and Castiel laughed....after some time she came out looking fresh with her pjs on and she stood next to the bed\*\*\*

Phumi: Castiel we seriously cant share a bed

Castiel: why not

\*\*\*She gave him the "are you serious" look and he just shook his head\*\*\*

Castiel: stop being silly and get into bed....we are both adults Phumi

Phumi: you're not even wearing a shirt man

Castiel: so?

Phumi: mxm

\*\*\*She reached for two other standard pillows and she put them between them then she got in and faced the other way\*\*\*

Castiel: is all this necessary?

Phumi: im someone's girl so I can't let another man touch me

\*\*\*she said with a serious tone\*\*\*

Castiel: mxm imagine calling some boy with a small dick a man

\*\*\*He said to himself and Phumi turned\*\*\*

Phumi: askies?

Castiel: I wasn't talking to you

Phumi: mxm

\*\*\*She laid on her side again and they stayed in silence the Castiel reached for his phone and called Ruslan\*\*\*

Ruu: do you know how late it is

Castiel: sorcerers don't sleep at night

Ruu: fuck you!

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: so what are you up to ?

Ruu: you called to ask me that shit?

\*\*\*he said with an annoyed voice\*\*\*

Castiel: im trying to keep my mind occupied so I don't fuck this fine ass sleeping next to me

\*\*\*He said looking at Phumi and he saw her moving a bit and he smirked\*\*\*

Ruu: really now Cass?

\*\*\*he said annoyed\*\*\*

Cass: yeah....she's refusing to give me some ass so what should I do man I mean my dick is rock hard and she put pillows between us can you believe it

Ruu: you're so fucking unbelievable

\*\*\*He dropped the call and Cass called him again\*\*\*

Ruu: can you just stop calling me man!

Castiel: I can't man you are my brother so I need to vent out

\*\*\*Ruu breathed out annoyed to the core by him\*\*\*

Ruu: fine vent so I can drop this fucken call

Castiel: damn i can tell that you're really annoyed cause you're busy cursing left right and center man

Ruu: im waiting Cass

Castiel: ok look the fine ass is Phumi

Ruu: the same Phumi you can't read

Castiel: yeah

Ruu: are you out of your damn mind man!

Castiel: maybe I mean I even tried walking around naked in front of her and she just won't budge man am I losing my charm Madou

\*\*\*Phumi chuckled not believing what was happening with her back still facing Cass\*\*\*

Castiel: she's even laughing at me man I swear this girl is a demon.....no one has ever denied my charms man....she's heartless

\*\*\*Phumi gasped\*\*\*

Ruu: you just said that in front of her

Castiel: she's hurting my feelings so it's a tit for a tat

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed defeated\*\*\*

Ruu: you're an ass you know that right

Castiel: dude she's always rubbing her stupid boyfriend to my face and that shit hurts ok

Ruu: are you high or something Cass

Castiel: no im just sexually frustrated and also emotionally frustrated by Phumi

\*\*\*Phumi turned and snatched Castiel's phone and dropped the call then she switched it off and threw it at him\*\*\*

Phumi: you're an asshole no in fact you're a fucken jerk....you know what a jerk is even better o no ba mpya fela nx (you're just a dog)

\*\*\*Castiel just quickly pulled her and he smashed his lips on hers and he kissed her....she pushed him away from her and slapped him then he smirked looking at her angry face\*\*\*

Castiel: you know what they say about woman who slaps you or likes arguing with you they actually like you

Phumi: I don't like you Castiel....you're like an annoying fly that refuses to die even after spraying it with doom

\*\*\*He chuckled and he pulled her closer and she tried to push him off but the magnitude of the tightness of his grip around her was shocking....she couldn't move an inch\*\*\*

Castiel: a fly huh?

Phumi: let go of me

Castiel: why do you hate me Phumi mmmh?

Phumi: I said let go

Castiel: I asked you a question

\*\*\*he said with a serious look on his face and she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Phumi: I don't hate you

Castiel: then what is it?

Phumi: you're just....annoying

\*\*\* He moved as quick as lightning and she was now lying on her back and he was on top of her between her legs\*\*\*

Phumi: wha...how did we....

\*\*\*she had a shocked look on her face and Castiel shut her up with a kiss.... she tried to fight it but the kiss was too passionate for her to fight it she ended up kissing him back and soon they were kissing hungrily with Castiel running his hands on her body....they were both moaning through the kiss and it was clear that they were both feeling things.... within a speed of lightning he took her pyjama top off and moved to her breasts and he sucked on them like a hungry animal....he wasn't rough but he wasn't gentle either so Phumi was feeling things she never felt before....he then went back to her mouth avoiding her neck by all costs cause he knows that the moment his lips touch it he will lose it and he might feed on her.....

They continued to kiss with Castiel grinding on her...she was now soaking wet down there and her body was feeling thing she never felt before his touch his grab his kiss and his deep throat groans drove her crazy..... within a speed of lightning again her pyjama shorts were off and she wasn't wearing any underwear\*\*\*

Phumi: how did....

\*\*\*he shut her up with a kiss and she felt his hand on her pussy and she gasped then she felt his finger penetrating her and she moaned through the kiss....his finger did the things until she came all over his hand screaming and he smirked and licked his finger clean as she watched then he kissed her making her taste herself....

She then felt the tip of his dick on her entrance and she froze and he whispered to her\*\*\*

Castiel: relajarse bello (relax beautiful)

\*\*\*he pushed the tip in and she gasped moving back cause she felt some pain\*\*\*

Castiel: where are you going?

\*\*\*he said pulling her back and he kissed her pushing all of it in and she closed her eyes as she felt her walls stretching\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck....

\*\*\*he said and she remembered a condom\*\*\*

Phumi: Cass.... a... condom

\*\*\*he ignored her and started moving....she bit her bottom lip with her eyes closed as he moved in and out of her slowly\*\*\*

Castiel: open your eyes bello (beautiful)

Phumi: shit you're huge man

\*\*\*she said opening her eyes and he chuckled still moving in and out of her slowly....he grabbed her butt cheeks so tight that she felt like he was gonna rip them off his body....he increased his pace going in and out of her and she moaned cause now she was feeling a mixture of pain and pleasure.....

He was now lost in her that even when he grabbed the bed sheet they got ripped apart his lips found their way to his shoulder and his fangs got long and he bit on her while pounding on her now and she flinched with pain.....he then pulled his fangs out still pounding on her and he blew air on the bite mark....

He then pulled out and she found herself laying on her stomach and he was behind her sliding in....she wondered when they changed position but she moaned out loud when he started to move\*\*\*

Phumi: fuck Cass...ooh shit

\*\*\*she said shouting as he rammed on her from behind....his grip on her waist was so tight that she felt like he was gonna rip it apart\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck...

\*\*\*he said as he went deeper and she screamed moving forward which caused his veined dick to slip out cause she felt like he poked her womb or something but he pulled her back to him\*\*\*

Castiel: where are you going bello

Phumi: you're in too deep Cass

\*\*\* she said with a shaky voice and he slid in and pushed in deeper and she screamed\*\*\*

Castiel: who's a man between us?

Phumi: gosh Cass

\*\*\*she said as he fucked her from behind\*\*\*

Castiel: I asked you a question Phumi.....who's a man between us?

Phumi: you...you are Cass...you are

\*\*\* he then pulled his dick out leaving only the tip in then he slammed inside her hard and she screamed again moving forward but he held her in place\*\*\*

Castiel: uzoyeka ukukhuluma nami ingathi uyehla eshlahleni siyazwana! ( you gonna stop talking to me as if you're climbing down a tree alright)

Phumi: ooh God... yes...yes

\*\*\*he pulled back and slammed in her again and she screamed again trying to move forward but his tight grip stopped her\*\*\*

Castiel: and you're gonna end things with that boy ok

Phumi: ye...yes

\*\*\*he then stopped moving\*\*\*

Castiel: good

\*\*\*he then pulled out and within a blink of an eye she was now laying on her back with Castiel's head between her thighs....he started eating her up and she gasped ....he ate her up like a pro to a point that he ended up coming hard all over his face screaming loud with her whole body shaking vigorously.... he then reached for the towel and cleaned his face then he positioned himself as she laid there numb and he slowly entered her and she moaned while he groaned.....

He was now fucking her hard with a fast pace groaning like an angry animal when suddenly the bed broke in the middle which made Phumi to scream but Cass didn't stop.....he went hard on her holding her waist tight going deeper with Phumi screaming her lungs out....within a blink of an eye they were now by the wall with Castiel holding her bridal style....her eyes popped out when she saw that they were now by the wall.....he put her down and turned her to face the wall and he bend her and he opened her legs using his knee\*\*\*

Castiel: balance yourself with your hands against the wall

\*\*\*she did that and he inserted himself slowly from the back and she clenched her jaws moaning with her eyes closed cause she was super sore by now....he started fucking her hard and she put both her hands against the wall so she doesn't bump her head against it cause the

force that was coming from behind was too much....she was screaming so hard while he groaned as he fucked her brains out....he made sure he doesn't push too hard cause she might break her neck against the wall or something....

Anyway he grabbed both her shoulders and he fucked her hard as she screamed she felt like her bones were cracking as his grip got tighter....he went on and on and on until he slammed into her and released all his juices in her groaning loud then he cursed\*\*\*

Castiel: FUCK....FUCK....FUCK!

\*\*\* he then pulled out and his juices ran down her thighs....he saw that she was about to pass out and he quickly caught her before she could hit the floor\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*\*In the morning Castiel moved a bottle that had some stinking potion on her nostrils to wake her up and she made a face and she opened her eyes moving her face cause that thing smelled horrible....he laughed when she covered her nose and he closed the bottle and sat next to her....she opened her eyes and she found him staring at her with a smile on his face...she tried to sit up but she groaned as she felt an excruciating pain all over her body\*\*\*

Phumi: ahhhhh!

\*\*\*she cried out\*\*\*

Castiel: hey take it easy

\*\*\*he helped her to sit up and he put pillows to support her back on the headboard... her eyes got filled with tears cause the pain she was feeling was intense\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh God....why am I in pain like this

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Castiel: relax I'll give you something to make it better but you have to eat first

\*\*\*he picked a bowl full of oats mixed with milk and sugar\*\*\*

Castiel: open up

Phumi: I'll...i'll feed myself

\*\*\*she tried to take the bowl from him but the moment she moved her hand she screamed as she felt sharp pain on her shoulder that even her hand started shaking\*\*\*



Phumi: ooh God...ooh God

\*\*\*Castiel swallowed worryingly looking at her as tears continued to stream down her cheek...the bruises all over her body made him feel like shit for the first time ever....the last time he lost himself like this was the first time he made love to Juana \*\*\*

Castiel: eat up so I'll give you something for the pain please

Phumi: what happened to me Castiel.....what's wrong with me she felt like her bones were cracking as his grip got tighter....he went on and on and on until he slammed into her and released all his juices in her groaning loud then he cursed\*\*\*

Castiel: FUCK....FUCK....FUCK!

\*\*\* he then pulled out and his juices ran down her thighs....he saw that she was about to pass out and he quickly caught her before she could hit the floor\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*\*In the morning Castiel moved a bottle that had some stinking potion on her nostrils to wake her up and she made a face and she opened her eyes moving her face cause that thing smelled horrible....he laughed when she covered her nose and he closed the bottle and sat next to her....she opened her eyes and she found him staring at her with a smile on his face...she tried to sit up but she groaned as she felt an excruciating pain all over her body\*\*\*

Phumi: ahhhhh!

\*\*\*she cried out\*\*\*

Castiel: hey take it easy

\*\*\*he helped her to sit up and he put pillows to support her back on the headboard... her eyes got filled with tears cause the pain she was feeling was intense\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh God....why am I in pain like this

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Castiel: relax I'll give you something to make it better but you have to eat first

\*\*\*he picked a bowl full of oats mixed with milk and sugar\*\*\*

Castiel: open up

Phumi: I'll...i'll feed myself

\*\*\*she tried to take the bowl from him but the moment she moved her hand she screamed as she felt sharp pain on her shoulder that even her hand started shaking\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh God...ooh God

\*\*\*Castiel swallowed worryingly looking at her as tears continued to stream down her cheek...the bruises all over her body made him feel like shit for the first time ever....the last time he lost himself like this was the first time he made love to Juana \*\*\*

Castiel: eat up so I'll give you something for the pain please

Phumi: what happened to me Castiel....what's wrong with me why am in this kind of pain?

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Castiel: eat Phumi

\*\*\*he said and started feeding her....she ate sobbing he wiped her tears off and continued to feed her...He then put the bowl down and reached for a glass that had one of Ruslan's mixed potion for extreme pain\*\*\*

Castiel: its bitter but it will help you ok

\*\*\*she nodded with puffy eyes and he helped her drink it....she made a face while drinking it but she managed to finish it all\*\*\*

Castiel: give it a minute or so and you'll start feeling better ok

\*\*\*She nodded then she moved her eyes around\*\*\*

Phumi: where are we?.....this...this is not the bedroom we were in

Castiel: we broke the bed so I took you to this bedroom after you passed out

\*\*\*she frowned then she remember the bed breaking in the middle and the way she would find herself in different positions but she didn't remember moving at all worried her\*\*\*

Phumi: what...what are you?

\*\*\*she asked looking at him cause she knew no human could move that fast....and that bed that was broken in half was one of those king size beds that looked expensive so for it to break like that wasn't a normal thing\*\*\*

Castiel: you wouldn't believe me if I tell and if I show you you might run out of here naked so let's just say im not a normal human being

\*\*\*he said with a nervous smile and she wanted to say something but he interrupted her\*\*\*

Castiel: try to move your hand and tell me if you still feel pain

\*\*\*she did slowly and she didn't feel any pain then she sighed with relief.....she touched her shoulders and she felt some numbness on the joins\*\*\*

Castiel: let me go and run you a bubble bath

\*\*\*he got up and went to the bathroom....all the 5 bedrooms had en-suites\*\*\*

Phumi: Phumi what have you gotten yourself into

\*\*\*She said to herself touching her nana and it was numb..... well the sex was good until he mysteriously took her to the wall and from there on she didn't enjoy anything he was so deep and rough that all she felt was pain until she passed out\*\*\*

\*\*\* she was now inside a huge bathtub relaxing with her eyes closed Castiel was sitting on top of the toilet lid playing with his expensive manly ring that was on his pinky finger she tried to get him to give her some privacy but he refused to leave....they have been quiet for some time now\*\*\*

Castiel: you do know what this means right?

\*\*\*she opened her eyes\*\*\*

Phumi: what?

Castiel: what happened last night?

Phumi: what happened last night was just a once of thing Castiel

\*\*\*he looked at her with an intense look\*\*\*

Castiel: it means you're mine now Phumi and it also means you're gonna end things with that boy

\*\*\*she kept quiet frowning\*\*\*

Castiel: ngikhuluma nawe Phumelele ( im talking to you Phumelele)

Phumi: we can never work Cass

Castiel: and why not

Phumi: dude there's Kazi with a killer body and then there's me...

Castiel: what does her body got to do with us?

\*\*\*she sighed and rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Phumi: stop acting stupid Castiel.....im a big girl ok

Castiel: so?

\*\*\*he asked with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Phumi: you don't get it do you

Castiel: you're not big bello.... you're chubby with a nice ass and curves and plus to carry my child you gonna need all tha meat

\*\*\* her heart nearly stopped\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh God we didn't use a condom

Castiel: mmmmh

Phumi: o re mmmmh Castiel

Castiel: relax im clean in fact I can't get sick or carry diseases and I'll buy you the emergency pill so relax

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Phumi: you better and us sleeping together will never happen again

\*\*\*he chuckled looking at her\*\*\*

Castiel: keep dreaming Bello

-----

\*\*\*It was now in the morning around 10 and they were driving to Phumi's home Castiel did buy her the morning after pills even though he knew it won't work\*\*\*

Castiel: do you have any siblings

\*\*\*she shook her head no\*\*\*

Castiel: so you're the only child huh

Phumi: yeah

Castiel: mmmmh just so im clear you have only today to end things with that boy

\*\*\*she looked at him\*\*\*

Phumi: why would I do that

\*\*\*he looked at her briefly\*\*\*

Castiel: to save his life

\*\*\*her breath hinged\*\*\*

Phumi: what...what do you mean by that?

Castiel: cause I'll kill him if you don't and im not kidding bello

\*\*\*she swallowed hard....Phumi kept quiet thinking about what Castiel did to her in the early hours of the morning and what he just said while Castiel just whistled an ancient song his mother used to sing for him when he was still young....anyway they arrived and Castiel parked outside the yard then he turned and looked at her \*\*\*

Castiel: I'll come see you later ok

Phumi: you don't have to

Castiel: just stop ok....stop pushing me away Phumi im yours and you're mine end of the story....we are not doing this hide and seek game I made my intentions clear to you.... I even marked you so we are bound together for life

\*\*\*she frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Phumi: marked me?

\*\*\*she said frowning and he reached for her top and pulled the sleeves down a bit and she had a bite mark on her shoulder it was more like a scar of a bite mark\*\*\*

Castiel: this mark is more binding and more formal than a marriage certificate....whenever im in trouble it will have a burning and itchy like sensation and whenever you're not ok i will feel it so we are bound for life bello so you better end thinks with that boy or I'll kill him cause i will never share you

\*\*\*he said looking into her eyes and she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Phumi: what are you Castiel.... I mean everything that happened since....

\*\*\*he shut her up with a slow passionate kiss\*\*\*

Castiel: all you need to know now is I'll never hurt you

\*\*\* he then stopped and frowned looking inside the yard\*\*\*

Phumi: what

\*\*\*she said looking where he was looking\*\*\*

Castiel: Kazi is here

Phumi: what...how did you know?

Castiel: come on lets go in

\*\*\*she grabbed his arm\*\*\*

Phumi: you're not getting out of this car Castiel

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: you're not going inside alone bello....i don't trust your cousin

Phumi: well I do so you should leave

Castiel: if she hurts you in any way I'll kill her so it's better we go in together

Phumi: Cass...

Castiel: it's not up for discussion

\*\*\*he opened the door and got out and she also got out with a displeased look on her face\*\*\*

Castiel: stop sulking it makes you look ugly

\*\*\*he said walking to her holding her traveling bag \*\*\*

Phumi: mxm fokof

Castiel: askies?

\*\*\*she showed him her middle finger walking inside the yard and he chuckled shaking his head...Phumi saw an unfamiliar car inside the yard and she breathed out praying and hoping that it doesn't belong to Kazi cause she wasn't ready to face her....anyway they walked to the door then it got opened and Kazi walked out and she frowned when she saw Castiel walking behind Phumi\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh God

\*\*\*she said to herself\*\*\*

Phumi: hi

\*\*\*she said avoiding eye contact when she got to the door\*\*\*

Kazi: what is he doing here?

Castiel: how is that any of your business?

\*\*\*Kazi chuckled and she looked at Phumi with an angry look on her face\*\*\*

Kazi: wow.....so did you sleep with him?

Phumi: why are you here Kazi?

Kazi: I asked you a fucken question Phumelele did he fuck you..... yebo noma cha ( yes or no)

Phumi: you know what excuse me I don't have time for this nx.....i had a long night so I need to rest

\*\*\*she turned and attempted to take her bag but Castiel stopped her\*\*\*

Castiel: lead the way

Kazi: I flew this side to come and apologize for what I thought was me overreacting only to find out I wasn't....how could you do this to me Phumi?

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Castiel: what did she do?

\*\*\*he said with an annoyed\*\*\*

Kazi: im not talking to you wena

\*\*\*she said pointing at Cass\*\*\*

Castiel: well im talking to you....what is it that she did to you huh!

Kazi: she's a fucken jezebel.....she knew you were interested in me and she went after you

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Phumi: Kazi just because im keeping quiet doesn't mean im weak ok....ke tlao trapa wankutlwa ( I'll fuck you up you hear me).....osaka nyaka go ntlwaela blaen.....otla nnyela nx ( don't piss me off..... you'll shit yourself nx)

\*\*\*she said pointing at her\*\*\*

Phumi: o bitsa nna jezebel....nna Phumi ( you're calling me a jezebel....me Phumi)

Kazi: you knew he's interested in me Phumi yet you went after him!

\*\*\*she said shouting at her\*\*\*

Phumi: hai fokof man Kazi.... ungazogidina wena ( don't bore me)....uzala ekhaya uzongtshela amasimba nje...amasimba okunuka! ( you come to my home to tell me shit..... smelly shit!)

\*\*\*she said pointing at her and Castiel pulled her closer \*\*\*

Castiel: calm down she's not worth it

Kazi: so you two slept together

Phumi: yes we did so uzoyenzani ( what will you do)

\*\*\*she said looking angry\*\*\*

Kazi: uyinja wena Castiel....uyirubbish nx ( you're a dog Castiel.... you are rubbish)

\*\*\*she said with tears in her eyes and Cass chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: you're embarrassing yourself and upsetting my woman

\*\*\*she laughed bitterly\*\*\*

Kazi: did you just say your woman....you call this fat pig your woman

\*\*\*Phumi's eyes got filled with tears as what she just said hurt her\*\*\*

Castiel: what did you just say?

\*\*\*he said getting angry\*\*\*

Kazi: you heard me.....did she even tell you that she has a boyfriend and that she once had an abortion

\*\*\*Phumi's heart broke into pieces and tears rolled down her cheeks and Castiel clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Phumi: Kazi...

Kazi: you think you're all that but the truth of the matter is he's using you Phumi to make me jealous and you fell for it...you're no...

Castiel: ENOUGH!

\*\*\*he roared then he took out his phone and searched for a number and dialed it\*\*\*

Menzi: hello

Castiel: you better come to Phumi's home and take this rubbish of yours before she loses her teeth

\*\*\*Kazi's eyes popped out\*\*\*

Menzi: who's this?

Castiel: I SAID COME AND TAKE KAZI BEFORE I TRAUMATIZE HER FOR LIFE AND STOP ASKING ME STUPID QUESTIONS!

\*\*\*he shouted\*\*\*



Menzi: who the fuck are you?

Castiel: a man whom she's claiming as hers..... better make sure she gets it through her empty skull that I don't want her and I never will and if she insults Phumi ever again I'll rip her head off her shoulders and send it to you as a fucken souvenir

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and held Phumi's shaking hand\*\*\*

Castiel: lead the way

Phumi: why...why did you do that.....you know what happened Kazi now why would you say all that?

\*\*\*she said looking broken but Kazi ignored her\*\*\*

Kazi: why...why did you do that Castiel?

\*\*\*she said looking freaked out\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck off!

\*\*\* He said with a pissed off tone and followed Phumi to the back of the house where her bedroom was....she searched for her keys inside her bag and opened the door and she went inside but Cass stood still outside the door\*\*\*

MEANWHILE

\*\*\*Kazi's phone rang and she looked at it and it was Menzi.....she wiped her tears off and ignored it...it rang again and she ignored it again.....she went inside the house and took her hand bag and walked out she opened the gate and drove out leaving it wide opened\*\*\*

Kazi: nx

\*\*\*her phone rang again and she continued to ignore it then a message came through from Menzi but she didn't open it she continued to drive away\*\*\*

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

\*\*\*After putting her handbag on the bed she went back to the door to take her traveling bag and found Castiel still standing there\*\*\*

Castiel: aren't you gonna invite me in

Phumi: you should leave

\*\*\*she said avoiding eye contact\*\*\*

Castiel: im waiting bello

\*\*\*she sighed and made way for him\*\*\*

Castiel: you have to say it for me to be allowed to enter inside bello

\*\*\*she frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Castiel: ask no questions and I'll tell no lies

\*\*\*she stopped herself from saying anything else cause she was drained emotionally by what happened with Kazi\*\*\*

Castiel: im waiting

Phumi: come in Castiel

\*\*\*he smiled and took the first step and when his leg went in he walked in and put the bag down and he scanned the room\*\*\*

Castiel: it's nice and cozy

\*\*\*she didn't say anything she just went to the bed and sat down\*\*\*

Castiel: why did you abort?

\*\*\*she swallowed hard looking down\*\*\*

Phumi: I don't wanna talk about it

Castiel: what really happened Phumi?

Phumi: you need to leave....please

\*\*\*she said getting emotional\*\*\*

Castiel: did he force you to do it

\*\*\*tears ran down her cheeks\*\*\*

Phumi: you need to leave

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice\*\*\*

Castiel: did he force you yes or no

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone\*\*\*

Phumi: it doesn't matter does it

Castiel: answer my question Phumi

Phumi: I didn't abort he killed my baby ok

\*\*\*she said with tears running down her cheeks\*\*\*

Castiel: im listening

\*\*\*he said standing there with his hands inside his pockets\*\*\*

Phumi: I...i started bleeding and I was rushed to the hospital and when the tests came back they said I had abortion pills in my system

\*\*\*Castiel frowned\*\*\*

Phumi: I told them I didn't drink those pills but they didn't believe me.....they said another one was even inserted inside my vagina and nothing like that wouldn't happen without my knowledge but I didn't abort my baby

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Castiel: who do you think killed your baby?

\*\*\*she looked up at him\*\*\*

Castiel: is it that boy Thabo

\*\*\*she shook her head no\*\*\*

Phumi: it was some guy I dated before Thabo...a couple of minutes before I started bleeding we got intimate and he...fingered me I think that's when he inserted the pill....i confronted him and he denied it but said he's glad I wasn't pregnant anymore cause he couldn't have a child with me cause he was engaged to be married to another woman

\*\*\*Castiel clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Castiel: son of bitch

\*\*\*he said with a pissed off voice\*\*\*

Phumi: and the worst part is him and his family spread rumours about me saying I tried to pin the pregnancy on him then I aborted cause he caught me on my lie of trying to pin the baby on him.....I was insulted and my name got tarnished because of it

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Castiel: is he still alive?

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Castiel: what's his name?

Phumi: Kitso....Kitso Modiba.....i heard he got married but he's now divorced and he's on a wheelchair

\*\*\*he walked to Phumi and helped her stand up and he cupped her face and he perked her lips then he wiped her tears off and his phone rang...he answered it\*\*\*

Castiel: Madou

Ruu: Cass where you at?

Castiel: I just dropped Phumi off.....what's up?

Ruu: I need your help with something

Castiel: ok im on my way

Ruu: alright

\*\*\*they ended the call and he looked at Phumi\*\*\*

Castiel: I have to go I'll see you later ok

\*\*\*she nodded and he walked out then she sat down and sobbed painfully.....her phone rang and she wiped her tears and answered\*\*\*

Phumi: mama

Her mother: nono I forgot to tell you gore Kazi o ko ntlung ( at home) waiting for you

Phumi: I know

\*\*\*she sniffed wiping her tears off\*\*\*

Her mother: ohk....o shap nono? ( are you ok)

Phumi: yeah... im just tired

Her mother: ok rest I'll see you tomorrow

Phumi: ok shap

\*\*\*she dropped the call and she laid down and more tears gushed out\*\*\*

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Ray: hey can we talk

\*\*\*he said peeking inside Mbali's study room\*\*\*

Mbali: yeah

\*\*\*she said putting her pen down and Ray walked in and he went to sit on the couch and Mbali got up and went to join him by sitting on top of him facing him..... he pulled her face closer and they kissed\*\*\*

Ray: I love you my flower

\*\*\*she blushed\*\*\*

Mbali: I love you too

\*\*\*then he sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: what's wrong babe

Ray: how do you feel about Cataleya?

\*\*\*she sighed and she looked down\*\*\*

Ray: my flower

Mbali: I don't know

Ray: talk to me my flower I want to know how you really feel

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Mbali: I don't have a problem with her im just scared that you might love her more than you love Kalu

\*\*\*Ray frowned\*\*\*

Ray: what makes you think that?

Mbali: she doesn't have a demon inside of her

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: look at me

\*\*\*she did\*\*\*

Ray: Kalu is my son my heir and I love him with everything in me..... he has my blood running through his veins my flower and I wouldn't trade him for anything along with his crazy demon

\*\*\*she smiled and he perked her lips\*\*\*

Ray: I would never love him any less baby.... I may not show it but im glad that Saint protects you like that

Mbali: but he hurt you

Ray: cause I hurt you

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Ray: nothing changes my flower we just gonna have an added child into our small family and we're lucky the won't be any baby mama drama we gonna deal with

\*\*\*she sighed again\*\*\*

Mbali: I know but what if she doesn't like me Ray

Ray: what's there not to like about you my flower

\*\*\*he said smiling and she blushed\*\*\*

Ray: she's gonna have a stylish mother....a brother that will protect her always....you're the only mother she will know my flower I even think you'll be her favourite parent

\*\*\*she sighed and rested her head on his shoulder and he wrapped his arms around her\*\*\*

Ray: so should I go and bring her home

\*\*\*she kept quiet for a bit\*\*\*

Ray: if you're not ready to mother her its ok she'll stay with gogo and mkhulu until you're ready

\*\*\*she raised her head and looked at him\*\*\*

Mbali: you'd do that for me

Ray: anything for you my flower

Mbali: she's your daughter Ray

Ray: and you're my wife

Mbali: mmmh that's thoughtful of you but my "just Ray" would get mad at me for making his daughter to stay with his grandparents

\*\*\*he grabbed her ass and he pulled her closer\*\*\*

Ray: your "just Ray" is a married man now and a father and my wife is crazy as they come and she's protected by a biased demon so i need to think before I act now

\*\*\*she laughed and he smiled\*\*\*

Mbali: I can't believe you just said that

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: it's the truth

\*\*\*she pushed him a bit laughing then she stopped and breathed out\*\*\*

Mbali: its ok you can go and bring her home.....she's your daughter and what is mine is yours vice versa

Ray: you sure

\*\*\*she nodded and he smiled\*\*

Ray: thank you my flower you don't know how happy that makes me

\*\*\*they kissed for some time with Ray squeezing her ass.....after some time they broke the kiss and he smiled looking at her\*\*\*

Mbali: what

Ray: I love you

\*\*\*she blushed\*\*\*

Ray: and im sorry about everything that happened

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: im sorry too



Ray: the moment you start working im gonna give you four months to buy me a new car to replace the one you smashed

\*\*\*she raised her eyebrows looking at him\*\*\*

Ray: and another two months to buy me my expensive whiskey you poured down the drain

\*\*\*she held her smile then she breathed out\*\*\*

Mbali: not gonna happen.....if you want me to replace those things then you better pay up for breaking my heart by cheating on me and for laying a hand on me

\*\*\*he raised his eyebrows\*\*\*

Mbali: and my heart is priceless mister so I hope you're ready to be bankrupt

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: what the hell have I gotten myself into?

\*\*\*he said shaking his head with a smile on his face\*\*\*

Mbali: I ask myself that question everyday about you

Ray: what

\*\*\*he said tickling her and she laughed out loud trying to stop him\*\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray...st...stop...stop man....stop

Ray: take it back...take it back

\*\*\*he continued to tickle her until she farted and he stopped and he laughed at her as she also continued to laugh\*\*\*

Ray: wait did you just fart

\*\*\* she continued to laugh with tears running down her cheeks\*\*\*

Mbali: that's what you get for ticking me

\*\*\*she said still laughing while wiping her tears off and he laughed too then he smiled looking at her\*\*\*

Ray: I love you Mrs me and thank you for agreeing to mother Cataleya

\*\*\*she wiped her tears off\*\*\*

Mbali: thank you for asking me and not forcing her on me

\*\*\*he smiled and they kissed\*\*\*

-----

AT PHUMI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*it was now in the middle of the night and she felt something or someone cold holding her from behind and she jumped trying to get off the bed screaming but the grip around her got tighter \*\*\*

Cass: relax it's me

\*\*\*she stopped moving with her heart beating fast she was even shaking\*\*\*

Phumi: Ca...Cass?

Cass: yeah

\*\*\*she relaxed a bit\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh my God how did you...how...

\*\*\*he kissed the back of her neck\*\*\*

Cass: go back to sleep we will talk in the morning

\*\*\*she tried to get off his hold but she couldn't get off his tight grip\*\*\*

Phumi: let go man

\*\*\*he loosened his grip and she pushed his hand off her and sat up then she switched her side lamp on and he was shirtless lying next to her\*\*\*

Phumi: how the hell did you get in

Cass: I have my ways

\*\*\*then he frowned looking at her\*\*\*

Cass: you've been crying

\*\*\*she looked away\*\*\*

Cass: I don't want you crying bello

\*\*\*she frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Phumi: why do you call me bello....i hope awungithuki Castiel ( I hope you're not swearing at me Castiel)

\*\*\*he chuckled looking at her\*\*\*

Cass: no im not and bello means beautiful so relax

\*\*\*she looked down\*\*\*

Cass: and yes you're beautiful

Phumi: mxm

\*\*\*she got out of bed and she went to the bathroom and she did her business then the door opened while she was still busy \*\*\*

Phumi: what the fuck....dude!

\*\*\*he stood by the door he was only on his briefs with his hard dick print visible....his dick was laying on his thigh with veins visible on top of the briefs and the tip of it was peeping outside the briefs and she looked down after swallowing hard\*\*\*

Cass: what did I say about calling me dude

Phumi: please give me some privacy Castiel tuu

Castiel: the only time I'll give you some privacy is when you take a shit or when you're on your periods

\*\*\*she looked up at him and he grabbed his hard dick with a smirk on his face\*\*\*

Cass: finish up he's ready for you

Phumi: im not gonna have sex with you

\*\*\*she said reaching for the tissue and she wiped herself and she got up and wore her pyjama pants then she flushed and washed her hands\*\*\*

Cass: I love the shape of your ass and curves bello...they are appetizing damn

\*\*\*she wiped her hands and stood there looking at him\*\*\*

Phumi: move I want to get out

\*\*\*he took his dick out of the briefs and he massaged it looking at her and she felt herself getting wet\*\*\*

Cass: its all yours bello

Phumi: will you just stop....please

\*\*\*he got close to her and he cupped her face\*\*\*

Phumi: Cass don't

\*\*\*she said moving back but he pulled her closer\*\*\*

Cass: im not using you...well I need a baby from you but other than that im into you bello

Phumi: did you just say you need a baby from me

Cass: yeah

\*\*\*she tried to get away from him but he held her tight\*\*\*

Castiel: I'll worship the ground you walk on if you make me a father Phumi.....that's all I want from you.... your heart your loyalty and a baby it's all I need from you and not to make Kazi jealous....im too old for that shit

\*\*\*she looked away\*\*\*

Phumi: we don't know each other Castiel and for you to say you want a child from me is ridiculous and im still Thabo's girlfriend

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: you're banned from saying that name Phumi and I hope it's the last time you say that stupid name when im around!

\*\*\*she frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Castiel: im not playing and before the end of tomorrow he better be your ex

Phumi: you can't force me to do that

Castiel: wanna bet

\*\*\*he said and his eyes changed colour and she swallowed hard looking scared and within a blink of an eye they were on top of the bed and they were both naked and Castiel was between her legs\*\*\*

Phumi: what the hell..... Cass we can't....

\*\*\*he slid in and she closed her eyes as he stretched her wide and he groaned\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*In the morning Castiel woke her up with a morning glory that was electrifying and after that he told her he'll come pick her up later in the day and he left at least this time the only pain she felt was between her legs.....her pussy was sore from all the fucking and her inner thighs were painful... they went on the whole night and in the morning and she was exhausted...her phone rang and she reached for it and answered without looking at the screen\*\*\*

Phumi: hello

Voice: im still waiting for your call Phumi

\*\*\*she opened her eyes and she looked at the screen and the caller was Thabo\*\*\*

Phumi: ummm hey

Thabo: o sa le KZN le nou ( are you still in KZN)

Phumi: umm no ke mo gae ( no im at home)

Thabo: didn't I say call me so I can pick you up at the bus station

Phumi: ummm ma...mama and her boyfriend came to pick me up

\*\*\*she lied\*\*\*

Thabo: and why didn't you call me to tell me that

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: first of all Thabo if you really wanted to come and pick me up nkebe ongfounetse ( you would have called me) when I was still on the road but no you didn't....even last night you didn't call to check gore ke fitlhile or not ( I arrived or not) you were busy liking pictures tsa Sne on facebook with a heart reaction to care the same Sne you once cheated on me with so o sa batla gombora ( so don't bore me)

Thabo: o nyako reng Phumi? ( what are you trying to say Phumi)

Phumi: bona mo motho wa Modimo ( look here) it's too early for this so shap re tla bolela later ( we will talk later)

\*\*\*she said with an annoyed voice and she dropped the call and put her phone on silence and she went back to sleep.....Thabo called again but his call wasn't answered\*\*\*

-----

BACK IN KZN

\*\*\* Kazi woke up when she felt someone shaking her and she found an angry looking Menzi standing next to the bed\*\*\*

Menzi: sit up we need to talk!

\*\*\*he said with a pissed off tone and she yawned sitting up\*\*\*

Kazi: can't it wait Menzi im still sleepy

Menzi: no it can't

\*\*\*he sat on the edge of the bed and he looked at her intensely and she looked away\*\*\*

Menzi: why did you drive all the way here alone and without letting me know

Kazi: I don't report to you Menzi

\*\*\*she said getting out of bed and she went to the bathroom leaving Menzi chuckling as he got angry....after some time she came back and sat on the bed looking down\*\*\*

Menzi: what's going on with you Ntandokazi

\*\*\*she kept quiet\*\*\*

Menzi: ngikhuluma nawe ( im talking to you) man Ntandokazi damn it!

\*\*\*she jumped when he shouted at her\*\*\*

Menzi: do you fucken know how worried I was...do you!

\*\*\*she swallowed feeling guilty now\*\*\*

Menzi: why did you ignore my calls and why did some fucker call me to tell me shit about you!

\*\*\*she continued to keep quiet which made Menzi's anger to hit the roof top and he got up and took off his belt and he wrapped half of it around his hand and Kazi quickly got off the bed looking scared\*\*\*

Kazi: wenzani Menzi ( what are you doing Menzi)

Menzi: im talking to you and you're ignoring me ungenza islima Ntandokazi ( you are making me a fool Ntandokazi)...ngiyisiwula sakho mina? ( am I your fool?)

\*\*\*he said sounding angry and Kazi got really scared\*\*\*

Kazi: cha (no)

Menzi: then answer my fucken questions!

\*\*\*she stood there shaking\*\*\*

Menzi: who the fuck was that guy that called me!

Kazi: i...i don't know

Menzi: im gonna ask you for the fucken last time who was that guy

\*\*\*he said taking a step closer and tears ran down her cheeks\*\*\*

Kazi: his...his name is Castiel and.... and he's my ex

-----

AT HEATH AND NALEDI'S HOUSE

\*\*\* Naledi was in the laundry room busy sorting out their dirty clothes for washing when Heath walked in with Ike in his arms\*\*\*

Heath: you still don't want the house help doing our laundry obi m

\*\*\*she looked at him and she smiled when she saw Ike\*\*\*

Naledi: hey baby

\*\*\*Ike smiled when he saw his mother\*\*\*

Naledi: yeah she might be old but she has unmarried daughters so you'll never know



\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Heath: you're crazy you know that

Naledi: and you love me like that akere onye m

\*\*\*Heath blushed then Naledi's phone rang and she frowned cause she didn't recognize the numbers\*\*\*

Heath: who is it?

Naledi: I don't know

\*\*\*she answered it\*\*\*

Naledi: hello

Man: Hello....Naledi?

Naledi: yes who's this?

Man: ke Kitso's uncle

\*\*\*her face relaxed and she looked at Heath and put the phone on loud speaker\*\*\*

Naledi: malome lekae ( how are you uncle)

\*\*\*uncle sighed\*\*\*

Uncle: eish ngwanaka go gobe ( my child things are bad)

Naledi: what's wrong malome

Uncle: ke Kitso ngwanaka ( is Kitso my child)

Naledi: umm what happened is he ok?

\*\*\*she said looking at Heath and the uncle sighed\*\*\*

Uncle: he's dead....he was found beheaded

Naledi: what?

\*\*\*she said shocked and Heath frowned\*\*\*

Uncle: his body was found outside the door of his house and his...his head was found pinned on top of the gate..... the outside wall of his house was written in blood and go kwetswe ( and it was written) “ a life for a life ”

Naledi: oh my God

\*\*\*she said with a shocked voice and Heath took her phone from her and gave her Ike\*\*\*

Heath: uncle its Heath....o re what happened?

\*\*\*he said walking out of the laundry room\*\*\*

## Visionary Writings

[visionarywritings.com](http://visionarywritings.com)

### AT RUSLAN'S HOUSE

\*\*\*the guys were chilling while drinking Heath and Jabu where there too and they were introduced to Castiel who ended up showing them his fangs to prove that he's a real vampire and they were shocked....Cass caught Jabu staring at him as they continued drinking and chatting\*\*\*

Cass: what is it...why are you looking at me like that?

\*\*\*he asked Jabu\*\*\*

Jabu: so vele vele o vampire lepara? ( so you're a real vampire man?)

\*\*\*Heath chuckled shaking his head cause he knew he just started well after seeing La Parca with his own eyes he now believes that even mermaids are real \*\*\*

Jabu: and lethaima la gao ke Dracula.... wa bona ko dimoving Dracula o kgonna go chenchae nne mamanthane so le lethaima la gao le kgona go nna mamanthane? (and your father is a Dracula.... you see in movies Dracula can change and become a bat so does your father also turn to a bat?)

\*\*\*Heath and Ray laughed while Ruu just shook his head smiling cause he could tell that Jabu said something foolish\*\*\*

Heath: really Jabu?

Jabu: keng.....e monna die man ke vampire joh....senwa madi so ke curious nje ( what.... man this guy is a vampire.... a bloodsucker so im just curious)

\*\*\*Heath continued to laugh with tears coming out of his eyes\*\*\*

Cass: ok enough man....can we just stick to English or isiZulu assomblief

Jabu: Mr vampire sir wa bona sengamla a ke se frostane van die one one wa bona and ka se Zulu well dai deng ke batlang go go botsisa yona yo tlhoka that thing man wabona....mara sa wara Mshikaro o tla translat(a) ( Mr vampire sir you see I don't like English that much you see and when it comes to the Zulu language well what I want to say wont have that thing man you see....but don't worry Mshikaro will translate)

\*\*\*Heath was busy laughing while wiping his tears off\*\*\*

Ray: you two need to learn Pretorian Tswana to hang out with him cause English is a no no to him

Heath: and it's not because he can't speak it or understand it he's just a well-educated township boy

Ray: you can take Jabu out of the township but you can never take the township out of Jabu

\*\*\*They laughed except for Cass\*\*\*

Cass: well it's a shame cause I can also choose to speak French or Spanish with you Ray and Ruu cause basically English is not my father's tongue

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: Big Ray o tla translat(a) mos ( Big Ray you'll translate)

\*\*\*they laughed some more\*\*\*

Cass: mxm

Jabu: so Castino... mmmmh Cass ala Custard...Castor oil mpya ya ka ( my dog)... wena wa go pyegisa batho goet ( you who gives people diarrhea) was your Father a mamanthane? ( a bat)

\*\*\*Ray and Heath busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

Ruu: what's a mama....whatever he said

Heath: a flying bat

\*\*\*He said laughing and Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Cass: so you're Mr funny guy heh nja

Jabu: not really mfowethu ka zama nje ( not really my man I just try)

\*\*\*more laughter\*\*\*

Cass: mxm

Jabu: on a serious note nja yam was your father a mamanthane like the movies show?

Cass: no

Jabu: so dai moerskonds ( so those assholes) are lying to us

Cass: yep

Jabu: mesono ya bo mmabona nx ( their mothers' cunts)

\*\*\*Heath and Ray laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: a vampire heh?

\*\*\*Cass just looked at him\*\*\*

Jabu: so you are like bo Edward and whatnots ba se Twilight or na bo bayasinyela nje ( they are also shitting on us)

\*\*\*Cass chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: im a hybrid man

Jabu: hybrid neh

\*\*\*Cass nodded and Jabu turned to Heath\*\*\*

Jabu: keng hybrid? (what is a hybrid)

\*\*\*he whispered to him and Ray heard him and both him and Heath laughed\*\*\*

Heath: he's a half human half vampire

Jabu: then why a sa re byalo ( then why didn't he just say that)

\*\*\*more laughter... he then looked back at Cass who was finding it hard to even get mad at him\*\*\*

Jabu: so how does a human blood taste like?

Cass: like your favourite smoothie

\*\*\*he said smirking\*\*\*

Jabu: mmmmh

\*\*\*he said nodding\*\*\*

Cass: so how does it feel like being a comedian?

Jabu: like your favourite smoothie

\*\*\*loud laughter erupted and Cass chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Heath: wa sika wena Jabu ( you're sick Jabu)

\*\*\*he continued to laugh\*\*\*

Cass: how do you survive with this dude man?

\*\*\*he asked Ray\*\*\*

Ray: he's a breath of fresh air man there's none other than him

\*\*\*Cass just shook his head\*\*\*

Jabu: on a lighter note....baby daddy ya Mshikaro is dead

Ray: what...who got to him Ezeh

Heath: I have no idea....but damn whomever he fucked with fucked him up pretty bad

Jabu: ba mo shapile ka slagpan ( they chopped his head off)....tlhogo kwa and mmele kwa ( his head was over there and his body was also over there)

\*\*\*he said using hand gestures as he spoke\*\*\*

Ray: damn

Heath: then his head was hung on his gate and a message was written on the outside of the wall of his house with his own blood

Cass: a life for a life

\*\*\*they looked at him\*\*\*

Ruu: what did you do Cass?

Cass: he deserved it

\*\*\*he said coldly\*\*\*

Heath: whoah wait....you're the one who did that to him

Cass: like I said he deserved it

Ruu: alors vous allez tuer des gens maintenant (so you're going around killing people now)

\*\*\*He spoke in French\*\*\*

Jabu: translate Mashikaro

\*\*\*Heath didn't say anything he just looked at Cass\*\*\*

Cass: what....you like him?

Heath: no but he was my daughter's biological father man

Cass: you're there for her so she won't miss him

Heath: that's beside the point man and you know it

Cass: look here Heath im not sorry I killed him and if I had Madou's powers I would wake him up for a couple of seconds and kill him again

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone\*\*\*

Ray: what did he do?

Cass: he killed Phumi's unborn child

\*\*\*they all kept quiet\*\*\*

Ruu: which Phumi

Cass: my Phumi

Ray: you have a Phumi?

Cass: yeah....Kazi's cousin

Ruu: wait a minute since when do you kill for her Cass....just because you can't read her thoughts so you decided to kill for her

Cass: no I fucked her and marked her so she's mine now

Ruu&Ray: WHAT?

Cass: stop being dramatic man

Ruu: are you out of your mind Cass!

Cass: no I think she's the one so I marked her

\*\*\*Ruu got up and he paced around and Jabu sat back and he observed\*\*\*

Ray: how can you mark a woman you know nothing about Cass since when are you this careless

Cass: she's the one

\*\*\*he said with a calm voice\*\*\*

Ruu: just like you thought Juana is the one right

Cass: really man?

Ruu: yes really..... vous savez parfois je me demande si nous sommes lies ( you know sometimes I wonder if we're really related)

Cass: je me demande aussi que parfois (I also ask myself that sometimes)

Ray: Ruu calm down

Ruu: no.... my father died because of his carelessness and now he doing the same shit because of a woman and he's putting all of us in danger

Heath: how so?

Ruu: she could be working with the fucken brethren for all we know

Jabu: konje they are those dangerous motherfuckers neh Big Ray

Ray: yeah

Jabu: mmmmh

Cass: well she's pregnant and she's marked so deal with your fears Madou

Ray: preg....so you didn't even use protection?

Cass: why would I?

Ray: CAUSE YOUR SPERMS ARE TOXIC THAT'S WHY!

\*\*\*Cass breathed out shaking his head and he took a sip of his drink for the first time since it was poured for him\*\*\*

Jabu: senwa madi sa go nwa byala....mmmh interesting ( a bloodsucker that drinks alcohol.... mmmmh interesting)

\*\*\*Heath held in his laugh\*\*\*

Ruu: I can't believe this



Cass: if she's who you fear she is then we will let the baby kill her so you have nothing to worry about

Ruu: what if she tells the brethren your location Castiel have you thought about that

Cass: SHE'S NOT WITH THE BRETHERN!

\*\*\*he said shouting\*\*\*

Ruu: AND HOW DO YOU KNOW THAT?

\*\*\*he shouted back\*\*\*

Cass: CAUSE I DO.....ENTLEK WHAT'S YOUR PROBLEM MADOU HUH...WHAT?

Jabu: a re "entlek" Mshikaro

\*\*\*he whispered to Heath\*\*\*

Ruu: you are putting our lives in danger again that's my problem Castiel.....whenever there's a pussy involved you lose your fucken senses and I have to pay for it...i even lost a father because of your shit!

\*\*\*Cass got up\*\*\*

Cass: FUCK YOU MAHAMADOU.....FUCK YOU YOU HEAR ME....FUCK YOU!.....DAD DIED BECAUSE OF YOU AND YOUR FAILURE TO LET SHIT GO..... YOU WENT AFTER THE BRETHERN AFTER I BETRAYED YOU THAT'S WHAT KILLED DAD!

Ray: guys calm down

Ruu: what did you say

Cass: you fucken heard me..... you didn't have to go after them I was the one that betrayed you and not them and now they are after us cause you killed their leader so stop pointing fingers as if you are innocent in all this!

\*\*\*Ruu rushed to Cass and grabbed him by his neck\*\*\*

Ruu: what did you just say to me?

Ray: you two better stop this nonsense now!

\*\*\*he said getting up\*\*\*

Cass: you wanna fight me now Madou huh... you wanna fight me?

Ruu: you piece of shit.....we're in this mess because of you and you have the fucken nerve to put the blame on me!

Cass: im your older brother Ruu so you better think long and hard before you cross the line!

Ray: I SAID YOU TWO BETTER STOP THIS NONSENSE NOW!

\*\*\*he roared and Cass grabbed Ruu's hand and he pushed him away with force and Ruu stumbled back almost losing his balance\*\*\*

Heath: no man guys....

Ruu: rapelos dispaesus!

\*\*\*he said with his open hand pointing at Cass and Cass flew across the room and he landed on top of the dining room table breaking it in the process\*\*\*

Jabu: THE FUCK!

Heath: damn

Ray: fuck

\*\*\*Then Cass quickly got up from the broken table and he screamed with an angry voice turning to a full flashed vampire in the process and within a blink of an eye he was next to Ruslan grabbing him by his neck up in the air with Ruu's legs floating on air\*\*\*

Ray: Cass stop it!

\*\*\*He squeezed hard and Ruslan started struggling to breath then his eyes turned black and Cass quickly let go of him as he felt electrocuted\*\*\*

Cass: you son of gun!

\*\*\*by now Jabu and Heath were standing afar shocked by what they were witnessing\*\*\*

Ruu: you wanna take me on bloodsucker?!

\*\*\*he said with a scary voice with his eyes still black in colour while Castiel was still in his vampire form\*\*\*

Cass: fuck you wizard!

Ruu: remanibus pelpaleusis!

\*\*\*a couch got lifted up in the air and it came flying to Cass and Cass punched it in the middle and it broke into half and he quickly took half of it and threw it at Ruslan and Ruu crossed his arms protecting his face and also blocking it and it hit him and fell in front of him..... then he charged at Cass and a fight broke out....punches were thrown from both sides...it was more of a fist fight but they were moving at a speed that Heath and Jabu couldn't follow\*\*\*

La Parca: ENOUGH!

\*\*\*his bone shattering voice roared filling the whole house with the floor shaking and voices of tortured souls being heard all over and the brothers stopped fighting\*\*\*

Jabu: yoh mmawe re ya diheleng! (we are going to hell!)

\*\*\*he said stumbling back while Heath stood there frozen with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Cass: he started it!

\*\*\*He said as he went to his human form instantly and Ruu's eyes changed back to their normal colour..... as for Ray only his face changed it was just a skull and on the hole where the eyes are supposed to be blazing fire was seen...then Ruu and Cass got down on one knee facing down\*\*\*

Ruslan: apologies great one

\*\*\*then La Parca turned and looked at Jabu and Heath and they slowly went down on their knee shaking with fear and La Parca turned back to the brothers\*\*\*

La Parca: ብዙ ጊዜያቸውን እንዲያሳልፉ እናደርጋለን ብዙ ደንቦችን ስለጣሱ እና ተወዳጅ ተወዳ (you are now using your powers to fight in front of humans)

\*\*\*he said with his scary voice and it was as if two men were speaking at the same time with different voices... its some scary shit im telling you\*\*\*

Ruu: apologies great one

Cass: whatever he said great one

La Parca: ጊዜው ገና አይደለም እነሱ በዝርዝር ዝሩ ላይ አይደሉም (I see you are tired of existing in this world)

Cass: what....nooo....your grace I have a baby on the way so no we are not

\*\*\*Ruu looked at Cass with clenched jaws with a deadly look on his face\*\*\*

La Parca: እምም ሞትን ያታልላልይህ ደግሞ ሞትን ያታልላል ( you impregnated a human without her consent)

Cass: ummm well I believe she's my mate so couples get intimate and babies are made your grace

\*\*\* then out of the blue Cass felt like he was being strangled and he held his neck choking\*\*\*

La Parca: የእሱ ምርጫ ሳይሆን የአባቱ ነው እናም እሱ ተጠያቂው እሱ ነው ( don't act smart with me creature I can end you here and now!)

\*\*\*Cass continued to choke and Ruu looked down with his eyes closed praying that he doesn't kill him as for Heath and Jabu they saw Cass struggling to breathe on the floor while holding his neck but no one was holding him and they shook with fear and that's when Mad dog took over and Heath stopped shaking he just looked on with a straight face\*\*\*

Ruu: ይህ...ይህ ደግሞ ሞትን ያታልላል..... ሆን የአባ (for...forgive him great one...please)

\*\*\*La Parca turned and looked at Ruu and he released Cass and he coughed hysterically holding his neck\*\*\*

La Parca: ከዚህም በተጨማሪ ንስሏ ካሌገባችሁና ሁለንም ኃጢአታቸውን ካሌተሊከቡ.... ጊዜው ሲመጣው ይገባል እመጣህሁታገኙኛላችሁ ታገኙኛላችሁም ይገባል በጣም ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን ፍርሀት ለእነሱ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታውቁ ግን በእነሱ (since you're the matured one now listen here and pass this message to him....he better make sure that human he impregnated doesn't get killed by his creature she's carrying like the others that did or im taking him to hell and Belial will be his torturer)

\*\*\*Belial is one of the princes of hell.....Ruu swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruu: ላይ የእርምት ሻጥቶት ላይ ቢያስቀምጡትም እንኳ አያደርጉትም ሰዓቱ ሲመጣ ጥሩ ጋኔን ይፈጥርለታል..... በጨለማው አለም ውስጥ በጥሩ ሁኔታ ጥቅም ላይ ይውላል (I'll make sure it doesn't come to that great one..... what's so special about her great one if you don't mind me asking)

La Parca: በጣም ጥሩ የሆነ መሰብሰብ ያለባቸው ነፍሳት አሉ ጊዜው ገና አይደለም እነሱ በዝርዝር ላይ አይደሉብዙ ጊዜያቸውን እንዲያሳልፉ እናደርጋለን ብዙ ደንቦችን ስለጣሱ እና ተወዳጅ ተወዳጅ ከሆኑት ሰው ጋር እምቢተኞች ናቸው ጊዜው ሲመጣ ለነፍሳቸው እመጣለሁማው አለም ውስጥ ( she belongs to the man upstairs and you know how protective he is of his children and since your half dead brother here decided to mix darkness and light and she ends up dying because of his creature she's carrying then I'll be permitted to come and take him to hell kicking and screaming)

\*\*\*Ruslan swallowed hard\*\*\*

Cass: what about Ray and Madou.....they also have women in their lives so does that mean they are spared unlike me the creature?

\*\*\*Ruu gave him a deadly look\*\*\*

La Parca: በጨለማው አለም ውስጥ በጥሩ ሁኔታ ጥቅም ላይ ይውላል ( they know where they are going when the time comes)

\*\*\*Ruu sighed\*\*\*

Cass: ok so what if Phumi gives her consent that I should change her then?

Ruu: will you just shut up!

\*\*\*he said through his teeth\*\*\*

La Parca: የእሱ ምርጫ ሳይሆን የአባቱ ነው እናም ( then she'll belong to the dark side)

\*\*\*then he turned to Heath aka Mad Dog and Jabu and Jabu peed on himself a little\*\*\*

La Parca: እሱ ተጠያቂው እሱ ነው (what about them)

Ruu: በጨለማው አለም ውስጥ በጥሩ ሁኔታ ጥቅም ላይ ይውላል እምመጤ ይህ ጥሩው አስማተኛ ጥሩ ልምምድ እንዲያስተምረው ስለዚህ ሊወለድ የ ( they are family and they know about Raymond and about me and also about Castiel and they don't have a problem with what we are or what we have great one)

La Parca: mmmmh

\*\*\*He looked between Cass and Ruu\*\*\*

La Parca: ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን ፍርሀት ለእነሱ አንደሚሰጥ .....ሲያስታውቁ ግን በእነሱ ላይ የእርምጃ ችግራት ላይ ቢያስቀ  
(I better not come back for this nonsense again....you know the rules and they are there for a reason)

\*\*\*then the floor shook and he was gone and Ray fell to the floor and Ruu rushed to him\*\*\*

Ruu: Ray...hey man.... hey

\*\*\*He said shaking him\*\*\*

Ray: mmmmh

\*\*\*he groaned and opened his eyes slowly\*\*\*

Ray: damn....

\*\*\*he said holding his throbbing head whilst sitting up and Mad Dog immediately went to sleep and Heath blinked fast as he looked around confused he then remembered what happened before Mad Dog took over and he jumped standing up looking around\*\*\*

Cass: he left relax

\*\*\*He said as he sat on his ass on the floor\*\*\*

MEANWHILE

\*\*\*for a couple of minutes now Thandi was outside the door trying to open the door but it just wouldn't budge.....she knocked shouting for Ruu to open the door for her but they couldn't hear her....she tried opening for the last time and it opened\*\*\*

Thandi: damn it....Ruu needs to check this stupid door something is wrong with it

\*\*\*she got in and closed it and she walked in and then she froze when she saw the state her living room was in\*\*\*

Thandi: THE HELL!

\*\*\*they quickly looked and froze when they saw her....she was breathing heavily with a deadly frown on her face\*\*\*

Ruu: baby...amour you're here

\*\*\*he said getting up and moving towards her slowly\*\*\*

Thandi: what... happened to the lounge Ruslan?

Ruu: ummm amour please calm down and let us explain

\*\*\*Jabu got up and he walked to her with a disturbed look on his face\*\*\*

Jabu: poo ya gao le broer ya gae ne ba tlisitse Game of Thrones season 9 episode 1 kamo that's why go le so and as for nna ke tlhoka Amo a nrapelle ka di tongues because of nthwe ke e boneng so shap ( your bull and his brother brought Game of Thrones season 9 episode 1 in here that's why its like this and as for me I need Amo to pray for me in tongues because of what I saw so bye)

\*\*\*He walked out and Castiel got up and followed him out and Thandi looked at Ruslan as if she was about to jump on him and choke him to death\*\*\*

-----

AT PHUMI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*She was resting....her body was tired and heavy and she also had light cramps on her lower stomach so after cleaning eating and bathing she decided to rest a bit....she woke up when she heard a knock on the door she huffed and got out of bed and went to see who it is....she found Thabo standing there holding a box of pizza and she sighed then she made way for him to enter he walked in and put the pizza down and sat on the edge of the bed\*\*\*

Thabo: hi

Phumi: hi

\*\*\*she said standing by the door with her arms folded across her chest\*\*\*

Thabo: e tla mo babe ( come here babe)

Phumi: ke shapo mo ( im fine here)

Thabo: I should be the one who's mad Phumi and not you

Phumi: did you sleep with her?

\*\*\*Thabo frowned\*\*\*

Thabo: who?

Phumi: Sne....did you sleep with her?

Thabo: ska batlompotela( don't piss me off) Phumi ok....a ka tlela masepa ao mo ( I didn't come here for that nonsense) I came to see my girl so stop that nonsense and bring drinks re tlo ja ( so we can eat)

\*\*\*Phumi chuckled getting angry\*\*\*

Phumi: I see you think I can't live without neh....you think no other man finds me attractive just because I've been faithful to you all this time neh

Thabo: you haven't cheated on me cause you love me too much and ga ona sebetse seo ( you don't have the nerve to do so)

Phumi: o sure about that

\*\*\*She said with a face full of attitude and Thabo frowned at her\*\*\*

Thabo: yah ke sure now are you done being crazy....e tla o tlopha one before re ja ( come and give me some before we eat)

Phumi: DID YOU SLEEP WITH SNE THABO....YES OR NO

Thabo: don't raise your fucken voice when you're talking to me Phumi o tla nnyela soos nou( you'll shit yourself right now)

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Phumi: answer my question Thabo.....you used to cheat on me with her and I forgave you and you promised gore you'll stay away from her and now you're liking dipicture tsa gae on facebook with a heart!

Thabo: and what if I am mmmh.....then what?

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice and she stood there with tears in her eyes\*\*\*

Phumi: 10 years Thabo...10 fucken years and you're still unfaithful to me



Thabo: Phumi listen here I didn't come here for this ok

Phumi: mmmh o tlile mo to fuck me then o tsamaye right?!

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Thabo: you're my woman o nagana gore ko ja mang if not wena ( you're my woman so who do you think I'll fuck if not you)

\*\*\* tears ran down her cheeks and she wiped them\*\*\*

Phumi: do you even still love me Thabo...do you?

\*\*\*he sighed annoyed\*\*\*

Thabo: you know what I'll come back when you're done with your periods cause clearly you're moody

\*\*\*he said with an annoyed voice getting up\*\*\*

Phumi: you know what...im done Thabo....im fucken done

Thabo: done with what

Phumi: this....its over...you can go and fuck whomever you want in peace and I'll do the same!

Thabo: you're dumping me...wena

\*\*\*he said chuckling\*\*\*

Phumi: get out!

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Thabo: you're nothing without me Phumi without me you're just a fat crazy bitch that guys only want to fuck because of that tight pussy you have and nothing else

\*\*\*tears filled her eyes and she let them fall\*\*\*

Phumi: I may be a fat girl but at least a kena pipi ennyane ya nonyane ( at least I don't a have a small dick) nx and there's also a man not a boy like you who has already eaten this pussy and his dick is juicy huge and satisfying nx

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Thabo: o reng...wa feba Phumi....osfebe nou Phumi? ( what did you say.....you're whoring around now Phumi....you're a whore now Phumi?)

\*\*\*he said moving closer to her and she got scared but she stood her ground still angry\*\*\*

Phumi: the only reason I stayed with you this long and tolerated your shit is because I love you and not because you satisfy me sexually so fuck you Thabo wankutlwa fuck you with your small dick nigga!

\*\*\*a slap landed on her cheek and she put her hand where she was slapped looking at him\*\*\*

Phumi: you...slapped me Thabo

Thabo: o nagana gore wankitsi wena sfebe neh....so o botsa nna masepa oa? ( you think you know me you bitch.....so you're telling me that shit?)

\*\*\*he said slapping her again\*\*\*

Thabo: o botsa nna masepa ao! ( you're telling me that shit!)

\*\*\*He said slapping her continuously as she cried out loud hiding her face with her arms and the moment he stopped and he grabbed her by her arms pulling them from her face she kneed him between his legs and he let her go and held his privates groaning and Phumi punched him hard and he fell on the floor and she got on top of him and started hitting him screaming\*\*\*

Phumi: fuck you Thabo wankutlwa fuck you mpaya ke wena ( you dog)

\*\*\*she then got off him and she kicked him on his face and she rushed to the door and as soon as she opened it she felt him grabbing her leg and she jumped screaming\*\*\*

Phumi: ntlogele...ntlogele! ( let go of me....let go of me!)

\*\*\*she said kicking him and he finally let her go and she ran outside crying and Thabo managed to get up and he chased after her\*\*\*

Thabo: e tla mo jou moerskond.....o raga nna wena....o tlo nnyela! ( come here you asshole....you kicked me.....you'll pay!)

\*\*\*as soon as she turned around the house going to the front yard she was met by Castiel rushing towards her and she ran and stood behind him still crying and when Thabo showed up he stopped\*\*\*

Castiel: you have 10 seconds to leave this place in one piece!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Thabo: YEH WENA PHUMI!

Castiel: 10....9...8....7....

-----

AT GIYANI

Uncle: what did the sangoma say?

Jackson: I hope its good news he told you...i could use with some good news now

\*\*\*the aunt sighed sitting down\*\*\*

Aunt: well its bad news actually

Uncle: what did he say?

Aunt: that we messed with a very dangerous man

Jackson: heh?

Aunt: apparently he's coming after us one by one

\*\*\*uncle stood up\*\*\*

Uncle: who is it....hi mani?!

Aunt: apparently we know him

\*\*\*she said looking at them\*\*\*

Jackson: we have messed with so many people aunty

Aunt: na swi tivha ( I know) man Jack but we need to protect ourselves since the person that made sure we are protected is dead.....that son of a bitch killed my mother and he's gonna pay once I find out who he is!

\*\*\*then Jackson received a call and he answered it was Joe's wife\*\*\*

Jack: Tinyiko

Tinyiko: its Joe...he...he

\*\*\*she cried\*\*\*

Jack: what's wrong with my brother Tinyiko?

Tinyiko: they say he collapsed at walk and he was rushed to the hospital.....im on my way there now

\*\*\*she then sniffed\*\*\*

Jack: why...why did he collapse?

Tinyiko: a ni swi tivi Jack ( I don't know Jack)

Jackson: ok umm I'll leave right away....keep me updated

Tinyiko: tell aunty na malome ( and uncle)

Jack: I will

\*\*\*then they ended the call and Jackson told them about the call\*\*\*

Uncle: tatane xekwembu ko yendlekala yini ( God what's going on)

Jack: but...but Joe doesn't know anything we get up to then why him

\*\*\*the aunt sighed\*\*\*

Aunt: he knows ko re he dlayi Tiyiselani's husband( he knows we killed Tiyiselani's husband)

Jackson: and the sangoma said it's someone we know

Uncle: wa loya manjeni Tiyiselani? ( so Tiyiselani practices witchcraft now?)...so she's working with someone dangerous to take us down....he he he